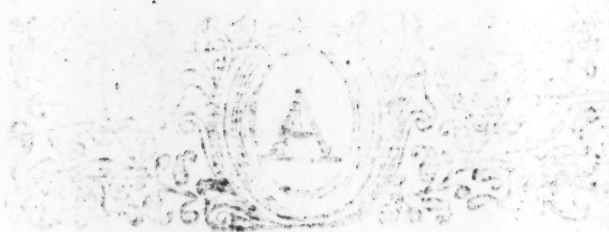







247






William Lilly


LIBRARY



1




GRAMATICA




DIALECTICA

2




RHETORICA




MUSICA


3



ARITHMETICA



GEOMETRIA



ASTRONOMIA

4

A SHORT  
Introduction  
OF  
GRAMMAR.  
Compiled and set forth  
for the bringing up of all  
those that intend to attain  
to the knowledge of the  
Latin Tongue.  
LONDON,  
Printed by Will. Norton  
Printer to the King's most  
Excellent Majesty, in  
Latin, Greek and  
Hebrew, 1699.  
CUM PRIVILEGIO.

UMI

THE  
LIBRARY

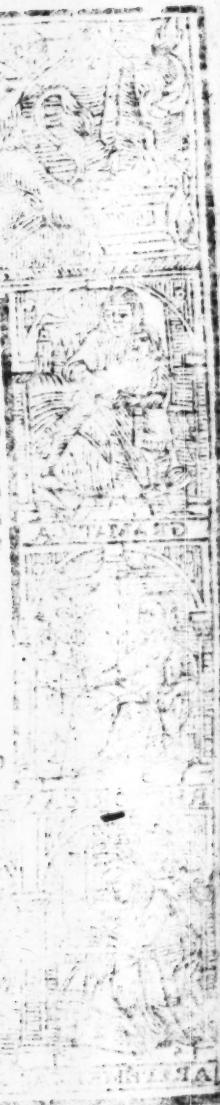
OF THE

UNIVERSITY OF  
THE STATE OF  
NEW YORK

ALBANY

1880

LIBRARY



## TO THE READER.



**D**erhozt every man to the learning of Grammar that intendeth to attain to the understanding of the tongues, (wherein is contained a great treasure of wisdom and knowledge) it would seem much vain and little needful; for as much as it is to be known, that nothing can surely be ended, whose beginning is either feeble or faulty; and no building be perfect, whenas the foundation and ground-work is ready to fall, and unable to uphold the burden of the frame. Therefore it were better for the thing it self, and more profitable for the learner to understand how he may best come to that which he ought most necessarily to have; and to learn the plainest way of obtaining that which must be his best and certainest guide, both of reading and speaking, than to fall in doubt of the goodness and necessity thereof, which I doubt whether he shall more lament that lacketh, or esteem that he hath it: and whether he shall oftner stumble at trifles and be deceived in light matters, when he hath it not; or judge truly and faithfully of divers weighty things when he hath it. The which hath seemed so many very hard to compass aforesaid, because that they who professed this art of teaching Grammar, did teach divers Grammars, and not one: and if by chance they taught one Grammar, yet they did it diversly, and so could not doe it all best; because there is but one bestness not only in every thing, but also in the manner of every thing.

As for the diversity of Grammars, it is well and profitably taken away by the Kings Majesties wisdom; who foreseeing the inconvenience, and favourably providing the remedy, caused one kind of Grammar by sundry learned men to be diligently drawn, and so to be set out onely: every where to be taught for the use of learners, and for avoiding the hurt in changing of school-masters.

The variety of teaching is divers yet, and alwayes will be, for that every school-master liketh that he knoweth, and seeth not the use of that he knoweth not, and therefore judgeth that the most sufficient way, which he seeth to be the readiest mean, and perfectest kind, to bring a learner to have a thorough knowledge therein.

Therefore it is not amiss, if one seeing by tryal an easier and readier way than the common sort of teachers do, would say what he hath proved, and of the commodity allowed: that others not knowing the same, might by experience prove the like: and then by proof reasonable judge the like: not hereby excluding the better way when it is found: but in the mean season forbidding the worse.

The first and chiefest point is, that the diligent Master make not the Schollar halt so much, but that he in continuance and diligence of teaching, make him to rehearse so, that while he hath perfectly that which is behind, he suffer him not to go forward: for this passing halt

## TO THE READER.

berthzoweth and hurteth a great sort of wits, and cast them into an amazement, when they know not how they shall either go forward or backward, but stick fast, as one plunged that cannot tell what to do or which way to turn him: and then the Master thinketh the Schollar to be a dullard: and the Schollar thinketh the thing to be uneasie, and too hard for his wit: and the one hath an evil opinion of the other, when oftentimes it is neither, but in the kind of teaching. Wherefore the best and chiefest point thoroughly to be kept, is that the Schollar have in mind so perfectly that which he hath learned, and understand it so, that not onely it be not a stop for him, but also a light and help unto the residue that followeth. This shall be the Masters ease, and the childs encouraging: when the one shall see his labour take good effect, and thereby in teaching be less tormented, and the other shall think the thing the easier, and so with more gladness be ready to go about the same.

In going forward, let him have of every declension of Nouns and conjugation of verbs, so many several examples, as they pass them, that it may seem to the schol-master, no word in the Latin tongue to be so hard for that part, as the Schollar shall not be able praiseably to enter into the forming thereof. And surely the multitude of examples (if the easiest and commonest be taken first. And so come to the stranger and harder) must needs bring this profit withal, that the Schollar shall best understand, and soonest conceive the reason of the rules, and best be acquainted with the fashion of the tongue. Wherein it is profitable, not onely that he can orderly decline his Noun and his Verb; but every way, forward, backward, by cases, by persons; that neither case of Noun, nor person of Verb can be required, that he cannot without stop or study tell. And untill this time I count not the Schollar perfect, nor ready to go any further till he hath this already learned.

This when he can perfectly do, and hath learned every part: not by rote, but by reason, and is more cunning in the understanding of the thing, than in rehearsing of the words (which is not past a quatter of a years diligence, or very little more to a painfull and diligent man, if the Schollar have a mean wit) then let him pass to the Concordes, to know the agreement of parts among themselves, with like way and diligence as is afore-described.

Where in plain and sundry examples, and continual rehearsal of things learned, and especially the daily declining of a verb, and turning him into all fashions, shall make the great and heavy labour so easie and so pleasant for the framing of sentences, that it will be rather a delight unto them, that they be able to do well, than pain in searching of an unused and unacquainted thing.

When these Concordes be well known unto them (an easie and pleasant pain, if the fore-grounds be well and thoroughly beaten in) let them

## TO THE READER.

them not continue in learning of the rules orderly, as they in their Syntax, but rather learn some pretty book, wherein is contained not only the eloquence of the tongue, but also a good plain lesson of honesty and godliness, and thereof take some little sentence as it lieth, and learn to make the same first out of English into Latin, not seeing the book or construing it thereupon. And if there fall any necessary rule of the Syntax to be known, then to learn it as the occasion of the sentence giveth cause that day, which sentence once made well, and as much as may be with the words of the book, then to take the book and construe it, and so shall he be less troubled with the parsing of it, and easiest carry his lesson in mind.

And although it was said before, that the Scholars should learn but a little at once, it is not meant that when the Master hath heard them a while, he should let them alone (for that were more negligence for both parts) but I would all their time they be at School, they should never be idle, but alwayes occupied in a continual rehearsing and looking back again to those things they have learned, and be more bound to keep well their old, than to take forth any new.

Thus if the Master occupy them, he shall see a little lesson take a great deal of time; and diligently enquiring and examining of the parts and the rules, not to be done so quickly and speedily as it might be thought to be, within a while, by this use, the Scholar shall be brought to a good kind of readyness of making, to the which if there be adjoined some use of speaking (which must necessarily be had) he shall be brought past the wearisome bitterness of his learning.

A great help to further this readyness of making and speaking, shall be, if the Master give him an English book, and cause him ordinarily every day to turn some part into Latin. This exercise cannot be done without his rules, and therefore both establish them, and ground them surely in his mind for readyness, and maketh him more able to speak suddenly, whensoever any present occasion is offered for the same. And it doth help his learning more a great deal to turn out of English into Latin, than on the contrary.

Furthermore, we see many can understand Latin, that cannot speak it, and when they read the Latin word in the book, can tell you the English thereof at any time; but when they have laid away their book, they cannot contrariwise tell you for the English the Latin again, whensoever you will ask them. And therefore this exercise helpeth this sore well, and maketh those words which he understandeth, to be readier by use unto him, and so perfecteth him in the tongue handsomely.

These precepts well kept, will bring a man clean past the use of this Grammar-book, and make him as ready as his book, and so meet to further things; whereof it were out of season to give precepts here,



## TO THE READER.

and therefore this may be for this purpose, enough, which to good School-masters, and skilful, is not so needful; to other meaner and less practised it may be, not only worth the labour of reading, but also of the using.

### *An Advertisement to the Reader.*

**I**N this Edition, for the greater profit and ease both of Master and Schollar, in the English Rules, and in the Latin Syntax, those words wherein the force of each example lieth, are noted with letters and figures, where need is: the governor, director, or guider, or that which is in place of it, with an <sup>a</sup>; the governed, or that which is guided by it, with <sup>b</sup>: or if there be more governors, the first with <sup>a</sup>, the second with <sup>a</sup><sup>a</sup>: and so if more governeds, the first with <sup>b</sup>, the second with <sup>bb</sup>: and sometimes, the order is directed by <sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>, <sup>c</sup>: or by figures, and words of the same, or such like nature, coupled together with little strokes between, so much as may be. That so in saying the ensamples, the children may (where or when the Master pleaseth) render again, only those words which are the ensample: as saying, *Quis nisi<sup>b</sup> mentis<sup>a</sup> inops oblatum respuat aurum?* may repeat again, <sup>a</sup> *inops* <sup>b</sup> *mentis*. So throughout all the Latin rules, for better understanding thereof, and for a short repetition, when the Master pleaseth, the sums of all the rules are set down, either in the words before the rule, or in the margin, that so they may be chained together briefly, and make perfect sense.

*The*



*The Latin letters are thus written.*

*The capital letters.* { A B C D E F G H I J K L M N O P Q  
R S T V U X Y Z.  
A B C D E F G H I J K L M N O P  
Q R S T V U X Y Z.

*The small letters.* { a b c d e f g h i j k l m n o p q r s t  
v u x y z.  
a b c d e f g h i j k l m n o p q r s s  
v u x y z.

*Letters are divided into Vowels  
and Consonants.*

A Vowel is a letter which maketh a full and perfect sound of it self; and there are five in number: namely, *a, e, i, o, u*; whereunto is added the Greek Vowel *y*.

A Consonant is a letter which must needs be sounded with a Vowel, as *b* with *e*. And all the letters, except the Vowels are Consonants.

A Syllable is the pronouncing of one letter or more with one breath: as, *A-ve*.

A Diphthong is the sound of two Vowels in one syllable; and of them there be four in number, namely, *e, æ, an, eu*; whereunto is added *ei*: as, *Aeneas, cæna, audio, euge, hei*.

Instead of *æ* and *œ* we commonly do pronounce *e*.

*The Greek letters are thus written.*

*The capital letters.* { A B Γ Δ E Z H Θ I K Λ M N Ξ O Π P Σ T  
Υ Φ Χ Ψ Ω.

*The small letters.* { α β γ δ ε ζ η θ ι κ λ μ ν ξ ο π ρ σ τ  
υ φ χ ψ ω.

P R E-

## P R E C A T I O.



Omine Pater, cœli ac terræ Effectōr,  
qui liberaliter tribuīs sapientiam om-  
nibus eam cum fiduciā abs te petenti-  
bus, exorna ingenii mei bonitatem,  
quam cum ceteris naturæ viribus mihi  
infudisti, lumine divinæ graciæ tuæ; ut non modo  
quæ ad cognoscendum te & Servatorem nostrum  
Dominum Jesum valeant, intelligam, sed etiam ita  
mente & voluntate persequar, & indies benignita-  
te tua, tum doctrina tum pietate proficiam, ut qui  
efficis omnia in omnibus, in me resplendescere do-  
nā tua facias, ad gloriam sempiternam immortalis  
Majestatis tuæ. A M E N.

## A P R A Y E R.



Almighty Lord and merciful Father,  
Maker of Heaven and Earth, which of  
thy free liberality givest wisdom abun-  
dantly to all that with faith and full assu-  
rance ask it of thee, beautifie by the light  
of thy heavenly grace the towardness of  
my wit, the which with all powers of  
nature thou hast poured into me; that I may not only  
understand those things which may effectually bring me to  
the knowledge of thee and the Lord Jesu our Saviour,  
but also with my whole heart and will, constantly follow  
the same, and receive daily increase through the bounti-  
ful goodness towards me, as well in good life as doctrine:  
so that thou which workest all things in all creatures,  
mayest make thy gracious benefits shine in me, to the  
eternall glory and honor of thine immortal Majesty.  
So be it.

T An

# ¶ An Introduction of the Eight parts of Latin speech.

**I**n speech be these eight  
parts following :

Noun,	{	decli- ned.	{	Adverb,	{	undecli- ned.
Pronoun,				Conjunction,		
Verb,				Preposition,		
Participle,				Interjection.		

## Of a Noun.



**N**oun is the name of a thing that may be seen, felt, heard or understood: as the name of my hand in Latin, is manus: the name of an house, is domus: the name of goodness, is bonitas.

A Noun.

Of Nouns, some be Substantives, and some be Adjectives.

Nouns  
of two  
sorts.

**A** Noun Substantive is that standeth by himself, and requireth not another word to be joyned with him to shew his signification: as, Homo a man; And it is declined with one article: as, Hic magister, a master: or else with two at the most; as, Hic & hæc parens, a father or mother.

A Noun  
Substan-  
tive.

**A** Noun Adjective is that cannot stand by it self in reason or signification, but requireth to be joyned with another word: as, Bonus, good, Pulcher, fair. And it is declined either with three terminations: as, Bonus, bona, bonum: or else with three articles: as, Hic hæc & hoc Foelix, Happy: Hic & hæc Levis, & hoc Leve, Light.

A Noun  
Adje-  
ctive.

**A** Noun Substantive either is Proper to the thing that it betokeneth: as, Edvardus is my proper name: or else is common to more: as, Homo is a common name to all men.

Two  
kinds of  
Nouns  
Substan-  
tives.

Numbers

## An Introduction of the

### Numbers of Nouns.

**I**N Nouns be two Numbers, the Singular and the Plural. The Singular number speaketh but of one: as, Lapis, a stone. The Plural number speaketh of more than one: as, Lapides, stones.

### Cases of Nouns.

**N**ouns be declined with six cases, Singularly and Plurally: the Nominative, the Genitive, the Dative, the Accusative, the Vocative, and the Ablative.

Nomi-  
native  
case.

The Nominative case cometh before the Verb, and answereth to this question, Who or What? as, Magister docet, *The Master teacheth.*

Genitive.

The Genitive case is known by this token Of, and answereth to this question, Whose, or Whereof? as, Doctrina Magistri, *The learning of the Master.*

Dative.

The Dative case is known by this token To, and answereth to this question, To whom, or To what? as, Do librum Magistro, *I give a book to the Master.*

Accusa-  
tive.

The Accusative case followeth the Verb, and answereth to this question, Whom or What? as, Amo Magistrum, *I love the Master.*

Vocative.

The Vocative case is known by calling or speaking to: as, O Magister, O Master.

Ablative.

The Ablative case is commonly joyned with Prepositions serving to the Ablative case: as, De Magistro, *Of the Master.* Coram Magistro, *Before the Master.*

Also In, With, Through, For, From, By, and Than, after the Comparative degree, be signs of the Ablative case.

Articles.

## Eight parts of Speech.

### Articles.

**A**rticles are borrowed of the Pronoun, and be thus declined.

Singulariter	{	Nominat. hic, hæc, hoc.	}	Pluraliter	Nominat. hi, hæ, hæc.
		Genitivo huius.			G. horum, harum, ho-
		Dativo huic.			Dativo his. (rum.
		Accus. hunc, hanc, hoc.			Accus. hos, has, hæc.
		Vocativo caret.			Vocativo caret.
		Ablativo hoc, hac, hoc.			Ablativo his.

### Genders of Nouns.

**G**enders of Nouns be seven: the Masculine, the Feminine, the Neuter, the Commune of two, the Commune of three, the Doubtful, and the Epicene.

The Masculine Gender is declined with this article *Hic*: as, *Hic vir, a Man.*

The Feminine Gender is declined with this article *Hæc*: as, *Hæc mulier, a Woman.*

The Neuter Gender is declined with this article *Hoc*: as, *Hoc saxum, a Stone.*

The Commune of two is declined with *Hic* and *Hæc*: as, *Hic & hæc parens, a Father or mother.*

The Commune of three is declined with *Hic* *hæc* and *hoc*: as, *Hic, hæc & hoc foelix, Happy.*

The Doubtful Gender is declined with *Hic* or *hæc*: as, *Hic vel hæc dies, a Day.*

The Epicene Gender is declined with one article, and under that one article both kinds are signified: as, *Hic passer, a Sparrow. Hæc aquila, an Eagle, both he and she.*

The

# An Introduction of the The declensions of Nouns.

*There be five declensions of Nouns.*

I.

**T**he first is when the Genitive and Dative case singular end in *a*. The Accusative in *am*. The Vocative like the Nominative, the Ablative in *a*. The Nominative plural in *a*. The Genitive in *arum*. The Dative in *is*. The Accusative in *as*. The Vocative like the Nominative. The Ablative in *is*.

*As in example.*

Hæc  
mensa.  
Hic Po-  
eta.  
Hic &  
hæc ver-  
na.  
Note.

Singulariter	Nominat. hæc mensa.	Pluraliter	Nominativo hæc mensa.
	Gen. hujus mensæ.		Gen. harum mensarum.
	Dativo huic mensæ.		Dativo his mensis.
	Accus. hanc mensam.		Accusat. has mesas.
	Vocativo ô mensa.		Vocativo ô mensa.
	Abla. ab hac mensa.		Ablat. ab his mensis.

Note that Fikia and Nata, do make the Dative and the Ablative plural in *is* or in *abus*. Also Dea, Mula, Equa, Liberta, make the Dative and the Ablative case plural in *abus* only.

II.

**T**he second is when the Genitive singular ends in *i*. The Dative in *o*. The Accusative in *um*. The Vocative for the most part like the Nominative, the Ablative in *o*. The Nominative plural in *i*. The Genitive in *orum*. The Dative in *is*. The Accusative in *os*. The Vocative like the Nominative: The Ablative in *is*.

*As in example.*

Hic vir.  
Hic li-  
ber.  
Hæc  
colus.  
Hic lo-  
gos.  
Note.

Singulariter	Nom. hic magister.	Pluraliter	Nominat. hi magistri.
	Gen. hujus magistri.		Ghorum magistrorum.
	Dat. huic magistro.		Dativo his magistris.
	Ac. hunc magistrum.		Accus. hos magistros.
	Vocat. ô magister.		Vocativo ô magistri.
	Ab. ab hoc magistro.		Abl. ab his magistris.

Here is to be noted, that when the Nominative endeth in *us*, the vocative shall end in *e*: as, Nominativo

## Eight parts of Speech.

nativo hic Dominus, Vocativo ô Domine ; **Except** Deus, that maketh ô Deus, and Filius that maketh ô Fili.

When the Nominative endeth in ius, if it be a proper name of a man, the Vocative shall end in i; Note.  
as, Nominativo Hic Georgius, Vocativo ô Georgi.

Also these Nouns following, make their Vocative in e or in us ; as, Agnus, lucus, vulgus, populus, chorus, fluvius.

Note also that all Nouns of the Neuter Gender of what declension soever they be, have the Nominative, the Accusative, and the Vocative alike in both numbers, and in the plural number they end all in a, as in example.

Singulariter	Nom. hoc regnum.	Pluraliter	Nominat. hæc regna.	Hoc dan- num. Hoc malum. Hoc verbum.
	Gen. hujus regni.		Gen. horum regnorum.	
	Dat. huic regno.		Dativo his regnis.	
	Accus. hoc regnum.		Accusat. hæc regna.	
	Voc. ô regnum.		Vocativo ô regna.	
	Abl. ab hoc regno.		Ablat. ab his regnis.	

**Except** Ambo and Duo, which make the Neuter gender in o, and be thus declined.

Pluraliter	Nominativo Ambo, amba, ambo.	Likewise Duo.
	Genitivo Amborum, ambarum, amborum.	
	Dativo Ambobus, ambabus, ambobus.	
	Accusativo Ambos, ambas, ambo.	
	Vocativo Ambo, amba, ambo.	
	Ab. Ambobus, ambabus, ambobus.	

**T**he third is when the Genitive singular endeth in is: The Dative in i: The Accusative in em, and sometime in im, and sometime in both: The Vocative like the Nominative: The Ablative in e or i, and sometime in both: The Nominative plural in es: The Genitive in um, and sometime in lum: The Dative in bus: The Accusative in es: The Vocative like the Nominative: The Ablative in bus.



# An Introduction of the

## As in Example.

Hic pa-  
ter.  
Hic panis.  
Hoc o-  
pus.  
Hoc ca-  
put.  
Hæc nu-  
bes.  
Hic vel  
hæc bu-  
bo.  
Hæc vir-  
tus.  
Hoc ani-  
mal.  
Hoc cu-  
bile.  
Hoc cal-  
car.

Singulariter

Nom. hic lapis.  
Gen. hujus lapidis.  
Dativo huic lapidi.  
Accus. hunc lapidem.  
Vocativo & lapis.  
Ablat. ab hoc lapide.

Pluraliter

Nom. hi lapides.  
Gen. horum lapidum.  
Dat. his lapidibus.  
Accus. hos lapides.  
Vocativo & lapides.  
Ab. ab his lapidibus.

Singulariter

No. hic & hæc parens.  
Gen. hujus parentis.  
Dativo huic parenti.  
Acc. hunc & hanc pa-  
(rentem.  
Voc. & parens. (rente.  
Abl. ab hoc & hac pa-

Pluraliter

No. hi & hæc parentes.  
Gen. horum & harum  
(parentum.  
Dat. his parentibus.  
Abos & hæc parentes.  
Voc. & parentes.  
Ab. ab his parentibus

I V.

**T**he fourth is when the Genitive case singular endeth in us. The Dative in ui. The Accusative in um. The Vocative like the Nominative. The Ablative in u. The Nominative plural in us. The Genitive in ium. The Dative in ibus. The Accusative in us. The Vocative like the Nominative. The Ablative in ibus.

## As in Example.

Hic gra-  
dus.  
Hæc por-  
ticus.  
Hoc cor-  
nu.

Singulariter

Nom. hæc manus.  
Gen. hujus manus.  
Dat. huic manui.  
Accus. hanc manum.  
Voc. & manus.  
Ab. ab hac manu.

Pluraliter

Nominat. he manus.  
Ge. harum manuum.  
Dat. his manibus.  
Accus. has manus.  
Voc. & manus.  
Ab. ab his manibus.

V.

**T**he fifth is when the Genitive and Dative case singular do end in ei. The Accusative in em. The Vocative like the Nominative. The Ablative in e. The Nominative plural in es. The Genitive in erum. The Dative in ebus. The Accusative in es. The Vocative like the Nominative. The Ablative in ebus.



# Eight parts of Speech.

As in Example.

Singulariter	Nom. hic merities.	Pluraliter	Nom. hi merities.	Hæc res.
	Gen. hujus meridiei.		G. horum meridierum.	Hæc fa-
	Dat. huic meridiei.		Dat. his meridiebus.	cies.
	Ac. hunc meridiem.		Accus. hos merities.	Hæc ac-
	Voc. ô merities.		Vocat. ô merities.	es.
	Ab. ab hoc meridie.		Ab. ab his meridiebus.	

Note that all Nouns of the fifth declension be of the feminine gender, except merities and dies.

## The declining of Adjectives.

A Noun adjective of these terminations, is thus declined, after the first and second declension.

Singulariter	N. bonus, bona, bonum.	Pluraliter	Nom. boni, bona, bona.	Niger, a, um.
	Gen. boni, bonæ, boni.		G. bonorum, bonarum,	Tardus,
	Dat. bono, bonæ, bono.		Dat. bonis. (bonorum.	a, um.
	A. bonum, bonam, bonū.		Ac. bonas, bonas, bona.	Satur, a, um.
	Vo. bone, bona, bonum.		Voc. boni, bona, bona.	
	Ab. bono, bonā, bono.		Ablativo bonis.	

There are besides these, certain Nouns adjectives of another manner of declining, which make the Genitive case singular in ius, and the Dative in i: which be these that follow, with their compounds.

Singulariter	No. unus, una, unum.	Pluraliter	Nom. uni, uia, una.	Nota.
	Genitivo unius.		Gen. unorum, unarum,	
	Dativo uni.		Dat. unis. (unorum.	
	A. unum, unam, unum.		Acc. unos, unas, una.	
	Voc. une, una, unum.		Voc. uni, una, una.	
	Ab. uno, una, uno.		Ablativo unis.	

Note that unus, a, um, hath not the plural number, but when it is joyned with a word that lacketh the singular number: as, Una literæ, Una moenia.

In like manner be declined totus, solus, and also ullus, alius, alter, uter, and neuter: saving that these five last rehearsed lack the Locative case.

Alius  
hath ali-  
ud not.

## An Introduction of the

A noun Adjective of three Articles is thus declined, after the third declension.

<p>Ingenus. Solers. Capax. Vetus.</p>	Singulariter	<p>Nomina. hic hac &amp; hoc felix. Gen. hujus felicis. Dat. huic felici. A. hunc &amp; hanc felicem &amp; hoc felix. Vocat. o felix. Ab. ab hoc hac &amp; hoc felice, vel felici.</p>	Pluraliter	<p>Nom. hi &amp; hæ felices, &amp; hæ felicia. Gen. horum, harum &amp; horum felicium. Dat. his felicibus. Ac. hos &amp; has felices, &amp; hæ felicia. Vo. o felices, &amp; o felicia. Ablat. ab his felicibus.</p>
	Singulariter	<p>No. hic &amp; hæ tristis &amp; hoc triste. Gen. hujus tristici. Dat. huic tristici. Ac. hunc &amp; hanc tristem, &amp; hoc triste. V. o tristis, &amp; o triste. Ablat. ab hoc hac &amp; hoc tristici.</p>	Pluraliter	<p>Nom. hi &amp; hæ tristes, &amp; hæ tristia. Gen. horum harum &amp; horum tristium. Dat. his tristibus. Acc. hos &amp; has tristes, &amp; hæ tristia. V. o tristes, &amp; o tristia. Ab. ab his tristibus.</p>

Levis &  
leve. Ce-  
ler cele-  
ris & ce-  
lere. Me-  
lior &  
melius.

## Comparison of Nouns.

**A**djectives whose signification may increase or be diminished, may form comparison.

There be three degrees of Comparison: The Positive, the Comparative and the Superlative.

The Positive betokeneth the thing absolutely without excess: as, Durus, Hard.

The Comparative somewhat exceedeth his Positive in signification: as, Durior, Harder. And it is formed of the first case of his Positive that endeth in i, by putting thereto or and us: as of Duri, hic & hæ durior, & hoc durius: of Tristi, hic & hæ tristior, & hoc tristius: of Dulci, hic & hæ dulcior, & hoc dulcius.

The Superlative exceedeth his positive in the high=

Three  
degrees  
of com-  
parison.  
The Po-  
sitive.  
The  
compa-  
rative.

The Su-  
perla-  
tive.

## Eight parts of Speech.

highest degree: as, Durissimus, Hardest. And it is formed of the first case of his Positive that endeth in i, by putting thereto s, and simus, as of Duri, durissimus, of Tristi tristissimus, of Dulci dulcissimus.

From these general rules are excepted these that follow: Bonus, melior, optimus. Malus, pejor, pessimus. Magnus, major, maximus. Parvus, minor, minimus. Multus plurimus, multa plurima, multum plus plurimum. Exception.  
Atter.  
Teter.  
Acqr.

And if the positive end in er, the Superlative is formed of the Nominative case by putting to rimus: as, Pulcher, pulcherrimus.

Also these nouns ending in lis, make the Superlative by changing lis into limus: as, Humilis, humillimus: Similis, simillimus: Facilis, facillimus: Gracilis, gracillimus: Agilis, agillimus: Docilis, docillimus.

All other nouns ending in lis do follow the general rule aforesaid: as, Utilis, utilissimus.

Also if a vowel come before us, it is compared by Magis and Maxime: as, Pius, magis pius, maxime pius. Assiduus, magis assiduus, maxime assiduus. Igneus.  
Impius.  
Arduus.  
Strenuus.

## OF THE PRONOUN.



Pronoun is a part of speech much like to a Noun: which is used in shewing or rehearsing.

There be fifteen Pronouns, Ego, tu, There fui, ille, ipse, ille, hic, is, meus, tuus, suus, be noster, vester, nostras, vestras, whereof four have the Vocative case: as, Tu, meus, noster, and nostras: and all others lack the Vocative case. teen  
pro-  
nouns.

To these may be added their compounds, Ego met, tute, idem, and also Qui, quæ, quod.

These eight Pronouns: Ego, tu, lui, ille, ipse, iste,

# An Introduction of the

Primi-  
tives.

Demon-  
stratives.

Rela-  
tives.

Deriva-  
tives.

Five  
things  
belong-  
ing to a  
Pro-  
noun.

Iste, hic, and is, be **Primitives**; so called, for be-  
cause they be not deribed of others. And they be  
also called **Demonstratives**, because they shew a  
thing not spoken of before.

And these **ix**, Hic, ille, iste, is, idem, and qui, be  
**Relatives**, because they rehearse a thing that was  
spoken of before.

These seven, Meus, tuus, suus, noster, vester, nostras,  
vestras, be **derivatives**: for they be deribed of their  
**Primitives**, mei, tui, sui, nostri, and vestri.

There belong to a **Pronoun** these five things,  
**Number, Case, and Gender**, as are in a **Noun**,  
**Declension and Person**, as here followeth.

## The Declension of Pronouns.

There be four Declensions of Pronouns.

The first  
declen-  
sion.

These three, Ego, tu, sui, be of the first declension,  
and be thus declined.

Singulariter {  
Nominativo Ego.  
Genitivo mei.  
Dativo mihi.  
Accusativo me.  
Vocativo caret.  
Ablativo à me.

Pluraliter {  
Nominativo Nos.  
Gen. nostrum vel nostri  
Dativo nobis.  
Accusativo nos.  
Vocativo caret.  
Ablativo à nobis.

Singulariter {  
Nominativo Tu.  
Genitivo tui.  
Dativo tibi.  
Accusativo te.  
Vocativo ô tu.  
Ablativo à te.

Pluraliter {  
Nominativo Vos.  
Gen. vestrum vel vestri  
Dativo vobis.  
Accusativo vos.  
Vocativo ô vos.  
Ablativo à vobis.

Singu. {  
and {  
Plural. {  
Nominativo caret  
Genitivo sui.  
Dativo sibi.

{  
{  
{  
Accusativo se.  
Vocativo caret.  
Ablativo à se.

The se-  
cond de-  
clension.

These **ix**, Ille, ipse, iste, hic, is, and qui, be of the  
second declension, and be thus declined.

Sing

## Eight parts of Speech.

Singulariter	{	Nom. iste, ista, istud.	}	Pluraliter	{	Nom. isti, ista, ista.
		Gen. istius.				G. istorū, istarū, istorū.
		Dat. isti.				Dativo istis.
		Ac. istum, istam, istud.				Accus. istos, istas, ista.
		Vocativo caret.				Vocativo caret.
		Abl. isto, ista, isto.				Ablativo istis.

He is declined like Iste, and also Ipse, saving that the Neuter gender in the Nominative case and in the accusative case singular maketh ipsum.

Nominativo, hic, hæc, hoc. Genitivo hujus. Dativo huic: as afores in the Pronoun.

Singulariter	{	Nomin. is, ea, id.	}	Pluraliter	{	Nominat. ii, ea, ea.
		Genitivo ejus.				G. eorum, earum, eorum.
		Dativo ei.				Dativo iis, vel eis.
		Ac. eum, eam, id.				Accus. eos, eas, ea.
		Vocativo caret.				Vocativo caret.
		Ablat. eo, ea, eo.				Ablat. iis, vel eis.
Singulariter	{	Nom. qui, quæ, quod.	}	Pluraliter	{	N. qui, quæ, quæ, (rum)
		Genitivo cuius.				G. quorum, quarum, quorum.
		Dativo cui.				Dat. quibus vel quæis.
		Ac. quem, quam, quod.				Ac. quos, quas, quæ.
		Vocat. caret. (qui.)				Vocativo caret.
		Ab. quo, quæ, quo vel				Ab. quibus vel quæis.

Likewise Quis and Quid be declined, whether they be Interrogatives, or Indefinites. Also Quisquis is thus declined.

Nom.	{	Quisquis.	}	Ac.	{	Quicquid.	}	Ab.	{	Quoquo.
		Quicquid.								Quaqua.
										Quaquo.

The Compound of Quis Note.

Where note that Quid is always a Substantive of the Neuter gender.

These five, Meus, tuus, suus, noster and vester, are of the third declension, and be declined like nouns of the third declension, in this wise.

## An Introduction of the

Singulariter	{	N. <i>Meus, mea, meum.</i>	}	Pluraliter	{	Nom. <i>mei, mea, mea.</i>
		Gen. <i>mei, mea, mei.</i>				Gen. <i>meorum, meorum,</i>
		Dat. <i>meo, mea, meo.</i>				Dat. <i>meis. (meorum.</i>
		A. <i>meum, meam, meum.</i>				Accus. <i>meos, meas, mea.</i>
		Voc. <i>mi, mea, meum.</i>				Voc. <i>mei, mea, mea.</i>
		Ab. <i>meo, mei, meo.</i>				Ablativo <i>meis.</i>

The  
fourth  
declen-  
sion.

**So is Noster declined, and Tuus, suus, vester; saving that these three last do lack the Vocative case.**

**Nostras, Vestras, and this Pronoun Cuius, be of the fourth declension and be thus declined.**

Singulariter	{	No. <i>hic &amp; hac nostras</i>	}	Pluraliter	{	N. <i>hi &amp; ha nostrates,</i>
		& <i>hoc nostrate.</i>				& <i>hac nostratia.</i>
		Gen. <i>hujus nostratis.</i>				Gen. <i>horum, harum &amp;</i>
		Dat. <i>huic nostrati.</i>				<i>horum nostratium.</i>
		A. <i>hunc &amp; hanc nostra-</i>				Dat. <i>his nostratibus.</i>
		<i>tem &amp; hoc nostrate.</i>				Ac. <i>hos &amp; has nostrates</i>
		Vocat. <i>o nostras &amp; o</i>				<i>&amp; hac nostratia.</i>
		<i>nostrate.</i>				Vocat. <i>o nostrates &amp; o</i>
		Ab. <i>ab hoc, hac &amp; hoc</i>				<i>nostratia.</i>
		<i>nostrate vel nostrati.</i>				Ab. <i>ab his nostratibus.</i>

Note.

**Here is to be noted, that Nostras, Vestras, and this Pronoun Cuius be called Gentiles, because they properly betoken pertaining to Countries or Nations, to Seats or factions.**

## A Pronoun hath three Persons.

Persons  
three.

**The first person speaketh of himself; as, Ego I, Nos We.**

**The second person is spoken to; as, Tu, Thou. Vos, Ye. And of this person is also every Vocative case.**

**The third person is spoken of; as, Ille, He. Illi, They. And therefore all Pronouns, Pronouns and Participles be of the third person.**



## Eight parts of Speech.

### OF A VERB.

**A** Verb is a part of speech, declined with **A Verb** mood and tense, and betokeneth doing, as, Amo, *I love*: or suffering, as, Amor, *I am loved*: or being, as, Sum, *I am*.

Of Verbs such as have persons, be called **Personals**: as, Ego amo, Tu amas. And such as have no persons, be called **Impersonals**: as, Tacet, *it irketh*. Oportet, *it behooveth*.

Of Verbs Personals there be five kinds, **Active**, **Passive**, **Neuter**, **Deponent** and **Commune**. Verbs personals.

A Verb **Active** endeth in o, and betokeneth to do: as, Amo, *I love*, and by putting to r, it may be a **Passive**: as, Amor. Active.

A Verb **Passive** endeth in or, and betokeneth to suffer: as, Amor, *I am loved*, and by putting away r, it may be an **Active**: as, Amo. Passive.

A Verb **Neuter** endeth in o, or m, and cannot take r, to make him a **Passive**: as, Curro, *I run*. Sum, *I am*. And it is Englished sometime **Actively**: as, Curro, *I run*, and sometime **Passively**: as, Egroto, *I am sick*. Neuter.

A Verb **Deponent** endeth in r, like a **Passive**, and yet in signification is but either **Active**: as, Loquor verbum, *I speak a Word*, or **Neuter**: as, Glorior, *I boast*. Deponent.

A Verb **Commune** endeth in a, and yet in signification is both **Active** and **Passive**: as, Osculor te, *I kiss thee*. Osculor à te, *I am kissed of thee*. Commune.

# An Introduction of the

## MOODS.

Moods  
fix.

**T**here be six Moods: the Indicative, the Imperative, the Optative, the Potential, the Subjunctive, and the Infinitive.

Indica-  
tive.

The Indicative Mood sheweth a reason true or false: as, Ego amo, I love. Or else asketh a question; as, Amas tu? Dost thou love?

Impera-  
tive.

The Imperative biddeth or commandeth: as, Ama, Love thou.

Optative.

The Optative wisheth or desireth, with these signs, *Would God, I pray God, or God grant*: as, Utinam amem, I pray God I love: and hath commonly an adverb of wishing joined with him.

Poten-  
tial.

The Potential mood is known by these signs, *May, can, might, would, should, could or ought*: as, Amem, I may or can love: without an Adverb joined with him.

Subjunc-  
tive.

The Subjunctive mood hath evermore some Conjunction joined with him: as, Cum amarem, when I loved. And it is called the Subjunctive mood, because it dependeth upon another Verb in the same sentence, either going before or coming after: as, Cum amarem, eram miser, when I loved, I was a wretch.

Infini-  
tive.

The Infinitive mood signifieth to do, to suffer, or to be: and hath neither number, nor person, nor Nominative case before him: and is known commonly by this sign *To*, as, Amare, To love. Also when two Verbs come together without any Nominative case between them, then the latter shall be the Infinitive mood: as, Cupio discere, I desire to learn.

## GERUNDS.



# Eight parts of Speech.

## GERUNDS.

**T**here be moreover belonging to the Infinitive mood of verbs, certain voices called **Gerunds**, ending in di, do, and dum: which have both the active and passive signification: as, Amandi, of loving, or of being loved. Amando, in loving, or in being loved. Amandum, to love, or to be loved.

Gerunds  
three: di,  
do, dum.

## SUPINES.

**T**here be also pertaining unto Verbs, two **Supines**: the one ending in um, which is called the first Supine, because it hath the signification of the Verb active: as, Eo amatum, I go to love. And the other in u, which is called the latter Supine, because it hath for the most part the signification passive: as, Difficilis amatu, Hard to be loved.

Supines  
two, in  
um & u.

## TENSES.

**T**here be five tenses or Times: the Present tense, the Preterimperfect, the Preterperfect, the Preterpluperfect, and the Future tense.

Tenses  
five.

The Present tense speaketh of the time that now is: as, Amo, I love.

Present  
tense.

The Preterimperfect tense speaketh of the time not perfectly past: as, Amabam, I loved or did love.

Preter-  
imperfect.

The Preterperfect tense speaketh of the time perfectly past, with this sign Have: as, Amavi, I have loved.

Preter-  
perfect.

The Preterpluperfect tense speaketh of the time more than perfectly past, with this sign Had: as, Amaveram, I had loved.

Preter-  
pluper-  
fect.

The Future tense speaketh of the time to come, with this sign shall or will: as, Amabo, I shall or will love.

Future.

P E R.

# An Introduction of the

## P E R S O N S.

Persons  
three.

**T**here be also in verbs three persons in both numbers: as, Singulariter, Ego amo, *I love*. Tu amas, *Thou lovest*. Ille amat, *He loveth*. Pluraliter, Nos amamus, *We love*. Vos amatis, *Ye love*. Illi amant, *They love*.

## C O N J U G A T I O N S.

Conju-  
gations  
four.

**V**erbs have four Conjugations, which be known after this manner.

The first Conjugation hath a long, before re and ris: as, Amare, amaris.

The second Conjugation hath e long, before re and ris: as, Docere, doceris.

The third Conjugation hath e short, before re and ris: as, Legere, legeris.

The fourth Conjugation hath i long, before re and ris: as, Audire, audiris.

Verbs in O, of the four Conjugations, be declined after these examples.

**A** Mo, amas, amavi, amare: amandi, amando, amandum: amatum, amatu: amans, amaturus. } *To love.*

Doceo, doces, docui, docere: docendi, docendo, docendum: doctum, doctu: docens, docturus. } *To teach.*

Lego, legis, legi, legere: legendi, legendo, legendum: lectum, lectu: legens, lecturus. } *To read.*

Audio, audis, audiui, audire: audien- di, audiendo, audiendum: auditum, auditu: audiens, auditurus. } *To hear.*

Indica-

# Eight parts of Speech.

## Indicative Mood, Present

### Tense singular,

*I love, Thou lovest, He loveth, We love, Ye love, They love.*  
*or, or, or, or, or, or,*  
*do love. doest love. doth love. do love. do love, do love.*

**A**mo, amas, amat. } *Pluraliter,* Amamus, amatis, amant.  
 Doceo, doces, docet. } Docemus, docetis, docent.  
 Lego, legis, legit. } Legimus, legitis, legunt.  
 Audio, audis, audit. } Audimus, auditis, audiunt.

*Preterim-* } *I loved or did love.*  
*perfect* }  
*tense sin-* } Amabam, }  
*gular.* } Docebam, } bas, bat. *Plur. bamus, batis, bant.*  
 } Legebam, }  
 } Audiebam, }

*Preterper-* } *I have loved.*  
*fect tense* }  
*singular.* } Amavi, }  
 } Docui, }  
 } Legi, } isti, it. *Plur. imus, istis, erunt vel er*  
 } Audivi, }

*Preter-* } *I had loved.*  
*pluperfect* }  
*tense sin-* } Amaveram, }  
*gular.* } Docueram, } ras, rat. *Plur. ramus, ratis, rant.*  
 } Legeram, }  
 } Audiveram, }

*Future* } *I shall or will love.*  
*tense sin-* }  
*gular.* } Amabo, } bis, bit. *Plur. bimus, bitis, bunt.*  
 } Docebo, }  
 } Legam, } es, et. *Plur. emus, etis, ent.*  
 } Audiam, }

*Impera*

# An Introduction of the

## Imperative Mood.

Love Love he, or Love we, or Love Love they, or  
thou, let him love. let us love. ye. let them love.

<i>Present tense sing- ular.</i>	Ama, amet,	} <i>Pl. amemus.</i>	amate, ament,
	amato: amato.		amatote: amanto.
	Doce, doceat,	} <i>Pl. doceamus.</i>	docete, doceant,
	doceto: doceto.		docetote: docento.
	Lege, legat,	} <i>Pl. legamus.</i>	legite, legant,
	legito: legito.		legitote: legunto.
	Audi, audiat,	} <i>Pl. audiamus.</i>	audite, audiant,
	audito: audito.		auditote: audiunto.

## Optative Mood.

God grant I love.

<i>Present tense sing. utinam</i>	Amem, ames, amet.	} <i>Pl. utin. amemus, ametis, ament.</i>
	Doceam,	
	Legam,	
	Audiam,	} <i>as, at. Plur. utin. amus, atis, ant.</i>

Would God I loved, or did love.

<i>Preterim- perfect tense sing. utinam</i>	Amarem,	} <i>res, ret. Plur. utin. remus, retis, rent.</i>
	Docerem,	
	Legerem,	
	Audirem,	} <i>I pray God I have loved.</i>

<i>Preterper- fect tense singular. utinam</i>	Amaverim,	} <i>ris, rit. Pl. utin. rimus, ritis, rint.</i>
	Docuerim,	
	Legerim,	
	Audiverim,	} <i>Would God I had loved.</i>

<i>Preterplu- perfect tense sing. utinam</i>	Amavissem,	} <i>ses, set. Pl. utin. semus, setis, sent.</i>
	Docuisssem,	
	Legissem,	
	Audivissem,	} <i>God grant I shall or will love hereafter.</i>

<i>Future tense sin- gular. utinam</i>	Amavero,	} <i>ris, rit. Pl. utin. rimus, ritis, rint.</i>
	Docuero,	
	Legero,	
	Audivero,	

# Eight parts of Speech.

## Potential Mood.

*I may or can love.*

*Present tense sing.* { Amem, ames, amet. *Plur.* amemus, ametis, ament.  
Doceam, }  
Legam, } as, at. *Plur.* amus, atis, ant.  
Audiam, }

*Preterimperfect tense sing.* { Amarem, } *I might, would, should, ought or could*  
Docerem, } (love.  
Legerem, } res, ret. *Plur.* remus, retis, rent.  
Audirem, }

*Preterperfect tense singular.* { Amaverim, } *I might, would, should or ought to*  
Docuerim, } (have loved.  
Legerim, } ris, rit. *Plur.* rimus, ritis, rint.  
Audiverim, }

*Preterpluperfect tense sing.* { Amavisssem, } *I might, would, should or ought to*  
Docuisssem, } (had loved.  
Legisssem, } fes, fet. *Plur.* semus, setis, sent.  
Audivisssem, }

*Future tense sing.* { Amavero, } *I may or can love hereafter.*  
Docuero, }  
Legero, } ris, rit. *Plur.* rimus, ritis, rint.  
Audivero, }

## Subjunctive Mood.

*When I love.*

*Present tense sing.* { Amem, ames, amet. *Plur.* cum amemus, ametis, ament.  
Doceam, }  
Cum Legam, } as, at. *Plur.* cum amus, atis, ant.  
Audiam, }

*Preter-*

# An Introduction of the

<i>Preterimperfect tense singular.</i>	Amarem, Dooerem, Legerem, Audirem,	<i>When I loved or did love.</i>
<i>Cum</i>		
<i>Preterperfect tense singular.</i>	Amaverim, Docuerim, Legerim, Audiverim,	<i>When I have loved.</i>
<i>Cum</i>		
<i>Preterpluper. tense singular.</i>	Amavisset, Docuisset, Legisset, Audivisset,	<i>When I had loved.</i>
<i>Cum</i>		
<i>Future tense singular.</i>	Amavero, Docuero, Legero, Audivero,	<i>When I shall or will love.</i>
<i>Cum</i>		

## Infinitive Mood.

<i>Present and Preterimperfect tense.</i>	Amare, Docere, Legere, Audire,	<i>To</i>	Lobe. Teach. Read. Hear.
<i>Preterperfect &amp; Preterpluperfect tense.</i>	Amavisse, Docuisse, Legisse, Audivisse,	<i>To have or had</i>	Loben. Caught. Read. Heard.
<i>Future tense.</i>	Amaturum, Docturum, Lecturum, Auditurum,	<i>esse, To</i>	love, teach, read, hear,
<i>Gerunds.</i>	Amandi, of loving, Docendi, of teaching, Legendi, of reading, Audiendi, of hearing,	<i>do, in</i>	dum, to love. dum, to teach. dum, to read. dum, to hear.

*Supines.*

## Eight parts of Speech.

ent. <i>Supines.</i>	{ Amatum, Doctum, Lectum, Auditum, }	Co	{ love, teach, read, hear. }	{ Amatu, Doctu, Lectu, Auditu, }	Co	{ be }	{ loved. taught. read. heard. }
----------------------	---	----	---------------------------------------	---	----	--------	--

*A Participle of the present tense.* { Amans, loving.  
Docens, teaching.  
Legens, reading.  
Audiens, hearing.

*The Participle of the first future tense.* { Amaturus, to love or about to love.  
Docturus, to teach or about to teach.  
Lecturus, to read or about to read.  
Auditurus, to hear or about to hear.

**Before we decline any Verbs in or, for supplying of many tenses lacking in all such Verbs, we must learn to decline this Verb Sum, in this wise following.**

Sum, es, fui, esse, futurus. **To be.**

## Indicative Mood.

*Present tense singular.* { Sum, **I am** : es, est. *Plural.* Sumus, estis, sunt.  
*Preterimperfect tense sing.* { Eram, **I was** : eras, erat. *Plural.* eramus, eratis, erant.  
*Preterperfect tense singul.* { Fui, **I have been** : fuisti, fuit. *Plural.* fuimus, fuistis, fuerunt vel fuere.  
*Preterpluperfect tense sing.* { Fueram, **I had been** : fueras, fuerat. *Pluraliter,* fueramus, fueratis, fuerant.  
*Future tense singular.* { Ero, **I shall or will be** : eris, erit. *Pluraliter,* erimus, eritis, erunt.

**Imperative**



# An Introduction of the

## Imperative Mood.

Pres. tense sing.	{ Sis, Es, Esto.	{ be thou	{ Sit, Esto.	{ } Plur. Simus,	{ Sitis, Este, Estote,	{ Sing, Sunto,
-------------------------	------------------------	-----------	-----------------	------------------	------------------------------	-------------------

## Optative Mood.

Present tense sing. utinam	{ Sim, I pray God I be : sis, sit. Plur. utinam simus, sitis, sint.
Preterimperf. tense sing.uti.	{ Essem, Would God I was : esses, esset. Plur. utinam essemus, essetis, essent.
Preterperfect. tense sing.uti.	{ Fuerim, I pray God I have been : fueris fuerit. Plur. utin. fuerimus, fueritis, fuerint.
Preterpluper. tense sing.uti.	{ Fuissem, Would God I had been : fuisses, fu- isset. Plur. utin. fuissimus, fuissetis, fuissent.
Future tense singul. utin.	{ Fuero, God grant I be hereafter : fueris, fu- erit. Plur. utin. fuerimus, fueritis, fuerint.

## Potential Mood.

Present tense singular.	{ Sim, I may or can be : sis, sit. Plur. simus, sitis, sint.
Preterimperf. tense singul.	{ Essem, I might or could be : esses, esset. Plur. essemus, essetis, essent.
Preterperfect tense singu- lar.	{ Fuerim, I might, could, should, or ought to have been : fueris, fuerit. Plur. fuerimus, fue- ritis, fuerint.
Preterpluper- fect tense singular.	{ Fuissem, I might, could, should, or ought to had been : fuisses, fuisset. Plur. fuissimus, fuissetis, fuissent.
Future tense singular.	{ Fuero, I may or can be hereafter : fueris, fu- erit. Plur. fuerimus, fueritis, fuerint.

Subjun-



# Eight parts of Speech.

## Subjunctive Mood.

Present tense	Sim, When I am: sis, sit. Plural. Cùm simus;
singul. Cùm	sitis, sint.
Preterimperfect tense	Essem, When I was: esses, esset. Plur. cùm
singul. cùm	essemus, essetis, essent.
Preterperfect tense	Fuerim, When I have been: fueris, fuerit.
singul. cùm	Plur. cùm fuerimus, fueritis, fuerint.
Preterpluperfect tense	Fuissem, When I had been: fuisses, fuisset.
singul. cùm	Plur. cùm fuissemus, fuissetis, fuissent.
Future tense	Fuero, When I shall or will be: fueris, fuerit.
singul. cùm	Plur. cùm fuerimus, fueritis, fuerint.

## Infinitive Mood.

Present and preterimperfect tense.	Esse, To be	Preterperfect and preterpluperfect tense.	Fuisse, to have or had been.
Future tense.	[ Fore vel futurum esse, To be hereafter.		

Verbs in or of the four Conjugations be declined after these examples.

**A** Mor, amâris vel amâre, amatus sum vel fui, amâri, amatus, amandus. **To be loved.**  
 Doceor, docêris vel docêre, doctus sum vel fui, docêri, doctus, docendus. **To be taught.**  
 Legor, legeris vel legere, lectus sum vel fui, legi, lectus, legendus. **To be read.**  
 Audior, audîris vel audîre, auditus sum vel fui, audîri, auditus, audiendus. **To be heard.**

# 'An Introduction of the

## Indicative Mood.

*I am loved.*

*Present  
tense sing.*

Amor, amâris vel amâre, amatur.  
Doceor, doceris vel docere, docetur.  
Legor, legeris vel legere, legitur.  
Audior, audiris vel audire, auditur.

*Pluraliter* { mur,  
mini,  
ntur.  
untur.

*Preterim-  
perfect  
tense sin-  
gular.*

Amabar, } *I was loved.*  
Docebar, }  
Legebar, } baris vel bare, batur.  
Audiebar, } barnini, bantur.

*Plur.* barni

*Preterper-  
fect tense  
singular.*

Amatus, } *I have been* tus es vel fuisti, tus est ve  
Doctus, } loved fuit. *Plu.* ti sumus vel fui  
Lectus, } sum vel mus, ti estis vel fuistis,  
Auditus, } fui, sunt, fuerunt vel fuere.

*Preterplu-  
perf. tense  
singular.*

Amatus, } *I had been* tus eras vel fueras, tus er  
Doctus, } loved vel fuerat. *Plu.* ti eramus ve  
Lectus, } eram vel fueramus, ti eratis vel fuer  
Auditus, } fueram tis, ti erant vel fuerant.

*Future  
tense sing.*

Amabor, } *I shall or will be loved.*  
Docebor, } beris vel bere, itur. *Pl.* bimur, imin  
Legar, } (untur  
Audiar, } eris vel ere, etur. *Plu.* emur, emini, entur

## Imperative Mood.

*Be thou* *Let him* *Let us be* *Be ye* *Let them*  
*loved.* *be loved.* *loved.* *loved* *be loved.*

*Present tense  
singular.*

Amare, ametur, } *Plu.* ame- } Amamini, amentur,  
amator : amator. } mur. } amaminor : amantor.  
Docere, doceatur, } *Pl.* doce- } Docemini, doceantur,  
docetor : docetor. } mur. } doceminor : docentor.  
Legere, legatur, } *Plu.* lega- } Legimini, legantur,  
legitor : legitor. } mur. } legiminor : leguntor.  
Audire, audiat, } *Pl.* audia- } Audimini, audiantur,  
auditor : auditor. } mur. } audiminor : audiuntor

*Optativ*

# Eight parts of Speech.

## Optative Mood.

*God grant I be loved.*

<i>Present tense singular, Utinam</i>	{ Amer, éris vel ére, étur. <i>Pl. uti. émur, émini, entur</i>
	{ Docear, } aris vel are, atur. <i>Plu. uti. amur, aminí, (antur.</i>
	{ Legar, }
	{ Audiar, }
<i>Preterimperfect tense singular, utinam</i>	{ Amarer, } <i>Would God I were loved.</i>
	{ Docerer, }
	{ Legerer, } reris vel rere, retur. <i>Pl. uti. remur, remini, (rentur.</i>
	{ Audirer, }

*I pray God I have been loved.*

<i>Preterperfect tense singular, utinam</i>	{ Amatus, } sim vel fuerim, tus sis vel fueris, tus sit vel fuerit. <i>Plur. utinam ti simus vel fuerimus, ti sitis vel fueritis, ti sint vel fuerint.</i>
	{ Doctus, }
	{ Lectus, }
	{ Auditus, }

*Would God I had been loved.*

<i>Preterpluperfect tense singular, utinam</i>	{ Amatus, } essem vel fuisssem, tus esses vel fuisses, tus esset vel fuisset. <i>Plur. utinam ti essemus vel fuisssemus, ti essetis vel fuissetis, ti essent vel fuissent.</i>
	{ Doctus, }
	{ Lectus, }
	{ Auditus, }

*God grant I be loved hereafter.*

<i>Future tense singular, utinam</i>	{ Amatus, } ero vel fuero, tus eris vel fueris, tus erit vel fuerit. <i>Plur. utinam ti erimus vel fuerimus, ti eritis vel fueritis, ti erunt vel fuerint.</i>
	{ Doctus, }
	{ Lectus, }
	{ Auditus, }

## Potential Mood.

*I may or can be loved.*

<i>Present tense singular.</i>	{ Amer, éris vel ére, étur. <i>Plur. émur, émini, entur</i>
	{ Docear, } aris vel are, atur. <i>Plur. amur, aminí, antur</i>
	{ Legar, }
	{ Audiar, }

## An Introduction of the

<b>Præterim- perfect tense sin- gular.</b>	{	Amarer,	}	<i>I would, should, or ought to be loved.</i> reris vel rere, retur. <i>Plu. remur, remin-</i> (rentur)
		Docerer,		
		Legerer,		
		Audirer,		
<b>Præter- perfect tense sin- gular.</b>	{	Amatus,	}	<i>I would, should, or ought to have been loved.</i> sim vel fuerim, tus sis vel fueris, tus si vel fuerit. <i>Plu. ti simus vel fuerimus</i> ti sitis vel fueritis, ti sint vel fuerint.
		Doctus,		
		Lectus,		
		Auditus,		
<b>Præterplu- perfect tense sin- gular.</b>	{	Amatus,	}	<i>I would, should, or ought to had been loved.</i> essem vel fuissē, tus esses vel fuisses, tu esset vel fuisset. <i>Plur. ti essemus vel fu-</i> issemus, ti essetis vel fuissetis, ti essen-
		Doctus,		
		Lectus,		
		Auditus,		
<b>Future tense sin- gular.</b>	{	Amatus,	}	<i>I may or can be loved hereafter.</i> ero vel fuero, tus eris vel fueris, tus er vel fuerit. <i>Plu. ti erimus vel fuerimus</i> ti eritis vel fueritis, ti erunt vel fuerint
		Doctus,		
		Lectus,		
		Auditus,		

## Subjunctive Mood.

*When I am loved.*

<b>Present tense sin- gular.</b>	{	Amer, eris vel ēre, ētur. <i>Plu. cūm emur, emini, entur</i>	}	(antur)
		Docear,		
		Legar,		
		Audiar,		
<b>Cūm</b>		aris vel are, atur. <i>Plu. cūm amur, amin</i>		
<b>Præterim- perfect ten. singular.</b>	{	Amarer,	}	<i>When I was loved.</i>
		Docerer,		
		Legerer		
		Audirer,		
<b>Cūm</b>		rēris vel rēre, retur. <i>Plu. cūm rēmur</i>		(rēmini, rentur)

*When I have been loved.*

<b>Præterper- fect tense singular.</b>	{	Amatus,	}	<i>When I have been loved.</i> sum vel fuerim, tus sis vel fueris, tus si vel fuerit. <i>Plu. cūm ti simus vel fuerimus</i> ti sitis vel fueritis, ti sint vel fuerint.
		Doctus,		
		Lectus,		
		Auditus,		

*Præterplu*

# Eight parts of Speech.

*When I had been loved.*

*Preterpluperfect tense.*  
*singular.*  
*Cum* { Amatus, } *essem vel fuisset, tus esses vel fuisses;*  
 { Doctus, } *tus esset vel fuisset. Plur. cum ti esse-*  
 { Lectus, } *mus, vel fuissetis, ti essetis vel fuissetis,*  
 { Auditus, } *ti essent vel fuissent.*

*When I shall or will be loved.*

*Future tense singular.*  
*Cum* { Amatus, } *ero vel fuero, tus eris vel fueris, tus erit*  
 { Doctus, } *vel fuerit. P. cum ti erimus vel fuerimus;*  
 { Lectus, } *ti eritis vel fueritis, ti erunt vel fuerint;*  
 { Auditus, }

## Infinitive Mood.

*Present and Preterimperfect tense.*  
 { Amari, } *To be* { ~~Lobed.~~  
 { Doceri, } { ~~Caught.~~  
 { Legi, } { ~~Read.~~  
 { Audiri, } { ~~Heard.~~

*Preterperfect tense and preterpluperfect tense.*  
 { Amatum, } *To have or had been loved.*  
 { Doctum, } *esse vel fuisse.*  
 { Lectum, }  
 { Auditum, }

*Future tense.*  
 { Amatum iri, vel amandum esse, } *2* { ~~Lobed~~  
 { Doctum iri, vel docendum esse, } *3* { ~~taught~~  
 { Lectum iri, vel legendum esse, } { ~~read~~  
 { Auditum iri, vel audiendum esse, } { ~~heard~~

*A participle of the preterperfect tense.*  
 { Amatus, } *Lobed.*  
 { Doctus, } *Caught.*  
 { Lectus, } *Read.*  
 { Auditus, } *Heard.*

*A participle of the Future tense in*  
 { Amandus, } *To* { ~~Lobed;~~  
 { Docendus, } *be* { ~~Caught.~~  
 { Legendus, } { ~~Read.~~  
 { Audiendus, } { ~~Heard;~~

## An Introduction of the

Of certain Verbs going out of Rule,  
which are declined and formed  
in manner following.

**P**ossūm, potes, potui, posse, potens. **To may or can.**  
Volo, vis, volui, velle: volendi, volendo, volendum: supinis caret: volens. **To will, or to be willing.**

Nolo, nonvis, nolui, nolle: nolendi, nolendo, nolendum: supinis caret, nolens: **To will or to be unwilling.**

Male, mavis, malui, malle: malendi, malendo, malendum: supinis caret: malens: **To have rather or to be more willing.**

Edo, edis vel es, edi, edere vel esse: edendi, edendo, edendum: esum esu, vel estum estu: edens, esurus vel esturus: **To eat.**

Flo, fis, factus sum vel fui, fieri: factus, faciendus: **To be made or to be done.**

Fero, fers, tuli, ferre: ferendi, ferendo, ferendum latum, latu: ferens, laturus. **To bear or suffer.**

Feror, ferris vel ferre, latus sum vel fui, ferri: latus, ferendus: **To be born or suffered.**

## Indicative Mood.

*Præsent tense singular.*  
**P**ossūm, potes, potest.  
Volo, vis, vult.  
Nolo, nonvis, nonvult.  
Malo, mavis, mavult. (est.  
Edo, edis vel es, edit vel  
Fio, fis, fit.  
Fero, fers, fert.  
Feror, ferris vel ferre,  
ferur.

*Pluraliter.*

Possūmus, potestis, possunt.  
Volumus, vultis, volunt.  
Nolumus, nonvultis, nolunt.  
Malumus, mavultis, malunt.  
Edimus, editis vel estis, edunt.  
Fimus, fitis, fiunt.  
Ferimus, fertis, ferunt.  
Ferimur, ferimini, feruntur.

*Præteritum.*

# Eight parts of Speech.

Preterim-  
perfect  
tense sin-  
gular.

Poteram,  
Volebam,  
Nolebam,  
Malebam,  
Edebam,  
Fiebam,  
Ferebam,  
Ferebar, baris vel bare, batur. *Plur.* bamur, bamini,  
(bantur)

Preterper-  
fect tense  
singular.

Potui, } Makui, }  
Volui, } Edi, } isti, it. *Plur.* imus, istis, erunt vel  
Nolui, } Tuli, } (ere.  
Factus } sum vel fui, tus es vel fuisti, tus est vel fuit.  
Latus } *Plur.* ti sumus vel fuimus, ti estis vel fuistis,  
ti sunt, fuerant vel fuere.

Preterplu-  
perfect  
tense sin-  
gular.

Potueram, } Malueram, }  
Volueram, } Ederam, } ras, rat. *Pl.* ramus, ratis,  
Nolueram, } Tuleram, } (rant;  
Factus } eram vel fueram, tus eras vel fueras,  
Latus } tus erat vel fuerat. *Plur.* ti eramus  
vel fueramus, ti eratis vel fueratis, ti  
erant vel fuerant.

Future  
tense sin-  
gular.

Potero, eris, erit. *Plur.* poterimus, eritis, erunt.  
Volam, } Edam, }  
Nolam, } Fiam, } es, et. *Plur.* eris, eris, eris  
Malam, } Feram, }  
Ferar, fereris vel ferere, feretur. *Plural.* feremur  
feremini, ferentur.

Possium, Volo, Malo, habe no Imperative



# An Introduction of the Imperative Mood.

		Noli, nolitō. <i>Pluraliter</i> Nolite, nolitote.			
<i>Present tense singu- lar.</i>	Es, esto :	edat,	} <i>P.</i> Edamus,	edite, este,	Edant,
	ede,	esto,		estote,	edun-
	edito :	edito :		editote :	to.
	Fito tu :	Fiat,	} <i>Pl.</i> Fiamus,	Fite,	Fiant,
		Fito :		fitote :	fiunto.
	Per,	Ferat,	} <i>Pl.</i> Fe-	Ferte,	Ferant,
	ferto :	ferto :		fertote :	ferunto.
	Ferre,	Feratur,	} <i>Pl.</i> Fe-	Ferimini,	Ferantur,
	fertor :	fertor :		feriminor :	feruntor.

## Optative Mood.

<i>Present tense sin- gular.</i>	Possim,	Nolim,	is, it.	<i>Plur.</i> <i>utinam</i> imus
	Velim	Malim,	itis, int.	
	Edam,			
	Fiam,	as, at.	<i>Plur.</i> <i>utinam</i> amus, atis, ant.	
<i>Utinam</i>	Feram,			
	Ferar, raris vel rare, ratur. <i>Pl. ut.</i> amur, amini, antur			
<i>Preterim- perfect ten- singular.</i>	Possim,	Ederem		
	Vellem,	vel effem	es, et.	<i>Plur.</i> <i>utinam</i> , emus
	Nollem,	Fierem,	etis, ent.	
	Mallēm,	Ferrem,		
<i>Utinam</i>	Ferrer, reris vel rere, retur. <i>Pl. ut.</i> remur, remini, rentur.			
<i>Preterper- fect tense singular.</i>	Potuerim,	Maluerim,	ris, rit.	<i>Pluraliter uti- nam</i> rimus, ritis,
	Voluerim,	Ederim,		
	Noluerim,	Tulerim,	rint.	
		sim vel fuerim,	tus sis vel fueris,	tus sit
<i>Utinam</i>	Factus	vel fuerit.	<i>P. ut.</i> ti simus vel fuerimus,	
	Latris		ti sitis vel fueritis,	ti sint vel fuerint.
<i>Preterplu- perfect tense sing.</i>	Potuissem,	Maluissem,	ses, set.	<i>Plur.</i> <i>utinam</i>
	Voluissem,	Edissem,	semus, setis, sent.	
	Noluissem,	Tulissem,		
		essem vel fuisset,	tus esses vel fuisses,	
<i>Utinam</i>	Factus		tus esset vel fuisset.	<i>Plur. uti.</i> ti esse-
	Latus		mus vel fuisset,	ti essetis vel fu-
			issetis, ti essent vel fuissent.	

*Futuro*

## Eight parts of Speech.

Future tense sin- gular.	Potuiro,	{	Maluiro,	{	ris, rit. <i>Plur. utinam</i>
	Voluiro,		Edero,		rimus, ritis, rint.
	Noluiro,		Tulero,		
Utinam	Factus	{	ero vel fuero,	{	tus eris vel fueris; tus erit
	Latus		vel fuerit. <i>Pluri.</i>		ti erimus vel fuerimus,
			ti eritis vel fueritis,		ti erunt vel fuerint.

The Potential and the Subjunctive Mood be formed like the Optative in voice, and do differ only in signification and sign of the Mood.

## Infinitive Mood.

Present tense and Preterim- perf. tense.	{	Posse,	{	Potuisse.
		Velle,		Voluisse.
	{	Nolle,	{	Noluisse.
		Malle,		Maluisse.
	{	Edere vel esse,	{	Edisse.
		Ferre,		Tulisse.
	{	Fieri,	{	Factum esse vel fuisse.
		Ferri,		Latum esse vel fuisse.
Future tense.	{	Esurum esse.	{	Factam iri, vel faciendum esse.
		Laturum esse.		Latum iri, vel ferendum esse.

Eo and queo make ibam and quibam in the Preterimperfect tense of the Indicative Mood, and ibo and quibo in the future tense: and in all other moods and tenses are varied like verbs in o of the fourth Conjugation, saving that they make their Gerunds, Eundi, eundo, eundum. Queundi, queundo, queundum.

Of the Preterperfect tense of the Indicative mood, be formed the Preterpluperfect tense of the same mood; the Preterperfect tense, the Preterpluperfect tense, and the Future tense of the Optative mood, the Potential mood, and the Subjunctive mood, the Preterperfect tense, and the Preterpluperf. tense of the Infinitive mood: as of Amavi,

Tense  
formed  
of the  
Preter-  
perfect  
tense.

## An Introduction of the

Amavi, are formed, Amaveram, amaverim, amavero by changing i into e short: and Amavissem, amavisse, keeping i still.

Imper-  
sonals.

**I**mpersonals be declined throughout all Moods and tenses in the voice of the third person singular only: as, Delectat, delectabat, delectavit, delectaverat, delectabit. Decet, decebat, decuit, decuerat, decabit, decere. Studetur, studebatur, studitum est vel fuit, studitum erat vel fuerat, studebitur, &c.

And they have commonly before their English, this sign *It*: as, *It* delighteth, Delectat. *It* becometh not, Non decet.

## OF THE PARTICIPLE.

**A** Participle is a part of speech, derived of a Verb, and taketh part of a Noun, as Gender, case and declension: and part of a Verb, as tense and signification, and part of both, as number and figure.

Four  
kinds  
of parti-  
cles.

There be four kinds of Participles: one of the Present tense, another of the Preter tense; one of the Future in *rus*, and another of the Future in *dus*.

Present  
tense.

**A** Participle of the Present tense, hath his English ending in *ing*: as, *Loving*, and his Latin in *ans*, or *ens*: as, *Amans*, *docens*. And it is formed of the Preterimperfect tense of the Indicative Mood, by changing the last syllable into *ns*: as, *Amabam*: *amans*. *Audiebam*, *audiens*. *Auxiliabar*, *auxilians*. *Poteram*, *potens*.

The first  
Future  
in *rus*.

**A** participle of the Future in *rus* betokeneth to do, like the Infinitive mood of the Active voice: as, *Amaturus*, *To love* or *about to love*. And it is formed of the latter Supine by putting *to* *rus*: as, *Doctus*, *docturus*.

Preter  
tense.

**A** Participle of the Preter tense hath his Eng-  
lish

## Eight parts of Speech.

**N** ending in *d, t, or n*; as, *Loved, taught, slain*; and his Latin in *tus, fus, xus*; as, *Amatus, visus, nexus*: and one in *uus*, as, *Mortuus*. And it is formed of the latter *Supine*, by putting to *s*: as, *Lectus, except Mortuus*.

**A** Participle of the Future in *dus* betokeneth to suffer like the infinitive Mood of the Passive voice: as, *Amandus, to be loved*. And it is formed of the Genitive case of the Participle of the Present tense by changing *tis* into *dus*: as, *Amantis, amandus*; *Legentis, legendus*. And it is also found to have the signification of the Participle of the Present tense as, *Legendis veteribus proficis, in reading old Authors thou dost profit*.

The second Future tense in *dus*.

**O**f a verb Active, and of a verb Neuter which hath the Supines come two Participles, one of the Present tense, and another of the Future in *rus*: as of *Amo* cometh *Amans, amaturus*; of *Curro*, *currens, cursurus*.

Of an active come two participles.

**O**f a verb Passive whose Active hath the Supines come two Participles: one of the Preter tense, and another of the Future tense in *dus*: as of *Amor* cometh *Amatus, amandus*.

Of a passive come two.

**O**f a verb Deponent come three Participles: one of the Present tense, one of the Preter tense, and another of the Future in *rus*: as of *Auxilior* cometh *auxilians, auxiliatus, auxiliaturus*.

Of a deponent three.

And if the verb Deponent do govern an Accusative case after him, it may form also a Participle in *dus*, as of *Loquor*, *loquendus*.

**O**f a verb Commune come four Participles: as of *largior* cometh *largiens, largiturus, largitus, largiendus*.

Of a commune four.

Participles of the present tense be declined like Nouns Adjectives of three Articles: as, *Nominativo hic, hæc & hoc amans*, *Genitivo hujus amantis*, *Dativo huic amanti, &c.*

Participles declined like Adjectives.

Parti-

## An Introduction of the

Participles of other tenses be declined like  
Nouns Adjectives of three divers endings : as  
Amaturus, amatura, amaturum. Amatus, amata, ama-  
tum. Amandus, amanda, amandum.

## OF AN ADVERB.

**A**

An Adverb is a part of speech joyn-  
ed to the Verbs, to declare their  
signification.

Adverbs some be of time : as,  
Hodie, cras, heri, perendie, olim,  
aliquando, nuper, quando.

Place : as, Ubi, ibi, hic, istic, illic, intus,  
foris.

Number : as, Semel, bis, ter, quater, ite-  
rum.

Order : as, Indè, deinde, denique, postre-  
mò.

Asking, or doubting : as, Cur, quare, undè,  
quorùm, num, nunquid.

Calling : as, Heus, ô, ehodum.

Affirming : as, Certè, nã, profectò, sanè,  
scilicet, licèt, estò.

Denying : as, Non, haud, minimè, neuti-  
quam, nequaquam.

Swearing : as, Pol, ædepol, hercle, medius-  
fidius.

Exhorting : as, Eia, agè, agitè, agedum.

Flattering : as, Sodes, amabò.

Forbidding : as, Né.

Wishing : as, Utinam, si, ô si, ô.

Gathering together : as, Simul, unà, pariter,  
non modò, non solùm.

Parting : as, Seorsim, sigillatim, vicatim.

Some be of

Some

## Eight parts of Speech.

**Choosing:** as, Potius, Imò.

**A thing not finished:** as, Penè, ferè, propè, vix, modò, non.

**Shewing:** as, En, ecce.

**Doubting:** as, Forsan, forsitan, fortassis, fortasse.

**Chance:** as, Fortè, fortuito.

**Likeness:** as, Sic, sicut, quasi, ceu, tanquam, velut.

**Quality:** as, Benè, malè, doctè, fortitèr.

**Quantity:** as, Multum, parum, minimum, paululum, plurimum.

**Comparison:** as, Tam, quàm, magis, minus, maximè.

**Certain Adverbs be compared:** as, Doctè, doctius, doctissimè. Fortitèr, fortius, fortissimè. Propè, propius, proximè.

**Also the voices of Prepositions, if they be set alone, not having any casual word to serve unto joyned with them, be not Prepositions, but are changed into Adverbs:** as, Qui antè non cavet post dolebit, **He that bewareth not afoze shall be sorry afterward.** Coràm laudare, & clàm vituperare, inhoneſtum est, **In presence to commend one, and behind the back to dispraise, is an unhonest point.**

## OF A CONJUNCTION.

**A** Conjunction is a part of speech, that joyneth words and sentences together.

**Of Conjunctions some be Copulatives:** as, Et, que, quoque, ac, atque, nec, neque.

**Disjunctives:** as, Aut, ve, vel, seu, five.

**Discretives:** as, Sed, quidem, autem, verò, at, ast.

**Some be Causals:** as, Nam, namque, enim, etenim, quia, ut, quòd, quum, quoniam, and quando set for quoniam.

**Some**

## An Introduction of the

Some be	<b>Conditionals :</b> as, Si, fin, modò, dum dummodò.
	<b>Exceptives :</b> as, Ni, nisi, quin, alioquin, præterquam.
	<b>Interrogatives :</b> as, Ne, an, utrum, necne, anne, nonne.
	<b>Illatives :</b> as, Ergo, idèd, igitur, quare, itaque, proin.
	<b>Adversatives :</b> as, Et si, quanquam, quamvis, licèt, estò.
	<b>Redditives to the same :</b> as, Tamen, at-tamen.
	<b>Electives :</b> as, Quàm, ac, atque.
	<b>Diminutives :</b> as, Saltem, vel.

## OF A PREPOSITION.

**A** Preposition is a part of Speech most commonly set before other parts, either in **Apposition :** as, Ad patrem ; or else in **Composition :** as, Indoctus.

These Prepositions following serve to  
*the Accusative case.*

Ad, Co.	{	Adversus,	{	Against.
Apud, At.				
Ante, Before.		Adversum.		
Cis, } On this	{	Extra, Without.	{	
Citra, } Ave.		Intra, Within.		
Circum, } About.		Inter, Between.		
Circa, }	{	Infra, Beneath.	{	
Contra, Against.		Juxta, Beside, or nigh to		
Erga, Towards.		Ob, For.		

Ponè



## Eight parts of Speech.

Ponè, Behind.	{	Ultra, Beyond.
Per, By or through.	{	Præter, Beside.
Propè, Nigh.	{	Supra, Above.
Propter, For.	{	Circiter, About.
Secundum, } After.	{	Usque, Until.
Post,	{	Secus, By.
Trans, On the further	{	Versus, Towards.
side.	{	Penes, In the power.

Where note, that Versus is set after his casual word: as, Londinum versus, towards London.  
And likewise may Penes be set also.

*These Prepositions following serve to the  
Ablative case.*

A, ab, abs, From or fro.	{	Pro, For.
Cum, With.	{	Præ, Before, or in com-
Coram, Before, or in	{	parison.
presence.	{	Palam, Openly.
Clam, Privily.	{	Sine,
De, }	{	Without.
E, } Of or fro.	{	Abſque,
Ex, }	{	Tenus, Until, or up to.

Where note that if the casual word joyned with Tenus, be the plural number, it shall be put in the Genitive case, and be set before Tenus: as, Aurium tenus, Up to the Ears. Genuum tenus, Up to the Knees.

Note also that the voices of Prepositions being set alone without their casual words, be not Prepositions, but are changed into Adverbs: as is aforesaid in the Adverb.

*Thes*

# An Introduction of the

## *These Prepositions following serve*

### *to both cases.*

In with this sign *To*, to the Accusative case: as,  
 In urbem, **I**nto the City. In without this sign *To*,  
 to the Ablative case: as, In te spes est, **M**y hope is  
 in thee. Sub noctem, **A** little before night.  
 Sub iudice lis est, **T**he matter is before the Judge.  
 Super lapidem, **U**pon a stone.  
 Super viridi fronde, **U**pon a green leaf.  
 Subter terram, **U**nder the earth.  
 Subter aquis, **U**nder the water.

## OF AN INTERJECTION.



**A**n Interjection is a part of  
 speech which betokeneth a sud-  
 den passion of the mind under  
 an imperfect voice.

Some are of Birth: as, Evax,  
 vah.

Some are of sorrow: as, Heu, hei.

**D**read: as, Atat.

**W**arrelling: as, Papæ.

**D**isbainig: as, Hem, vah.

**S**hunning: as, Apage.

**P**raising: as, Eugè.

**S**corning: as, Hui.

**E**xclamation: as, Proh Deum atque hominum  
 fidem.

**C**ursing: as, Væ, malum.

**L**aughing: as, Ha, ha, he.

**C**alling: as, Eho, ho, io.

**S**ilence: as, Au. And such others.

Some are of



# THE CONCORDS

of Latin Speech.

**O**f the due joyning of words in construction, it is to be understood, that in Latin speech there be three Concordes. The first between the Nominative case and the Verb: The second, between the Substantive and the Adjective, The third between the Antecedent and the Relative.

## The first Concord:

**W**hen an English is given to be made in Latin, look out the Principal Verb. If there be more verbs than one in a sentence, the first is the principal verb; except it be the infinitive mood, or have before it a Relative: as, *that, whom, which, or a Conjunction: as, Ut, that; cum, when; si, if; and such others.*

When ye have found the verb, ask this question, *who? or what?* and the word that answereth to the question shall be the Nominative case to the verb; except it be a verb Impersonal, which will have no Nominative case. And the Nominative shall, in making and construing Latin, be set before the verb, except a question be asked, and then the Nominative is set after the verb, or after the sign of the verb: as, *Amas tu? Lovest thou? Venitne Rex? Doth the King come?*

Likewise if the verb be of the imperative mood: as, *Ama tu, Love thou. Amato ille, Let him love.* And sometime when this sign it or there cometh before the English of the verb: as, *Est liber meus,*

## An Introduction of the

meus, It is my book. <sup>b</sup> Venit ad me <sup>a</sup> quidam, There came one to me. And that casual word which cometh next after the verb, and answereth to the question *whom?* or *what?* made by the verb shall commonly be the Accusative case; except the verb do properly govern another case after him to be construed withal: Si cupis <sup>a</sup> placere <sup>b</sup> magistro, <sup>a</sup> utere <sup>b</sup> diligentia, nec <sup>a</sup> sis tantus <sup>b</sup> cessator, ut <sup>b</sup> calcaribus <sup>a</sup> indigeas, If thou covest to please thy master, use diligence, and be not so slack, that thou shalt need spurs.

A Verb personal agreeth with his Nominative case in number and person: as, <sup>a</sup> Praeceptor <sup>b</sup> legit, <sup>a</sup> vos vero <sup>b</sup> negligitis, The master readeth and ye regard not. Where note, that the first person is more worthy than the second, and the second more worthy than the third.

Many nominative cases singular, with a conjunction copulative coming between them, will have a verb plural, which verb plural shall agree with the nominative case of the most worthy person: as, <sup>a</sup> Ego & <sup>a</sup> tu <sup>b</sup> sumus in tuto, I and thou be in safeguard. <sup>a</sup> Tu & <sup>a</sup> Pater <sup>b</sup> periclitamini, Thou and thy father are in jeopardy. <sup>a</sup> Pater & <sup>a</sup> Praeceptor <sup>b</sup> accersunt te, Thy father and thy Master have sent for thee.

When a Verb cometh between two nominative cases of divers numbers, the verb may indifferently accord with either of them, so that they be both of one person: as, Amantium <sup>a</sup> ira, amoris <sup>a</sup> reintegratio <sup>b</sup> est, The falling out of lovers is the renewing of love. <sup>a</sup> Quid enim nisi <sup>a</sup> vota <sup>b</sup> supersunt? For what remaineth save only prayers? Pectora percussit, <sup>a</sup> pectus quoque <sup>a</sup> robora <sup>b</sup> fiunt, She stroke her breast, and her breast turned into oak also.

Here note also, that sometime the Infinitive mood of a Verb, or else a whole clause afore-going, or else some member of a sentence may be the nominative

## Eight parts of Speech.

hath the case to the verb: as, <sup>a</sup> Diluculo surgere, salu-  
berrimum <sup>b</sup> est, To rise betime in the morning, is  
the most wholesome thing in the world. <sup>a</sup> Multum  
scire vita <sup>b</sup> est jucundissima, To know much, is the  
most pleasant (or sweetest) life of all.

### The second Concord.

**W**hen ye have an adjective, ask this questi-  
on *who?* or *what?* and the word that an-  
swereth to the question, shall be the substantive to it.

The adjective, whether it be a noun, pronoun, or  
participle, agreeth with his Substantive in case,  
gender and number: as, <sup>a</sup> Amicus <sup>b</sup> certus in <sup>a</sup> re <sup>b</sup> in-  
certa cernitur, A sure friend is tryed in a doubtful  
matter. <sup>a</sup> Homo <sup>b</sup> armatus, a man armed. <sup>a</sup> Ager  
<sup>b</sup> colendus, A field to be tilled. <sup>b</sup> Hic <sup>a</sup> vir, This  
man. <sup>b</sup> Meus <sup>a</sup> herus est, It is my master.

Where note, that the Masculine gender is more  
worthy than the Feminine, and the Feminine  
more worthy than the Neuter.

Many Substantives singular having a conjuncti-  
on copulative coming between them, will have an ad-  
jective plural, which adjective shall agree with the  
Substantive of the most worthy gender: as, <sup>a</sup> Rex  
& Regina <sup>b</sup> beati, The King and Queen are blessed.

### The third Concord.

**W**hen ye have a Relative, ask this question  
*who?* or *what?* and the word that answer-  
eth to the question shall be the antecedent to it.

The antecedent most commonly is a word that  
goeth before the relative, and is rehearsed again  
of the relative.

The relative agreeth with his antecedent in gen-  
der, number, and person: as, <sup>a</sup> Vir sapit <sup>b</sup> qui pauca  
loquitur, That man is wise that speaketh few  
things or words.

## An Introduction of the

Sometime the Relative hath for his Antecedent the whole reason that goeth before him, and then he shall be put in the neuter gender, and singular number: as, <sup>a</sup> In tempore veni, <sup>b</sup> quod omnium rerum est primum, I came in season which is the chiefest thing of all. But if the Relative be referred to two clauses or more, then the relative shall be put in the plural number: as, <sup>a</sup> Tu multum dormis, & <sup>a</sup> saepe potas, <sup>b</sup> quae ambo sunt corpori inimica, Thou sleepest much and drinkest often, both which things are nought for the body.

When this English *that* may be turned into this English *which*, it is a relative; otherwise it is a conjunction, which in Latin is called quod, or ut: and in making Latin it may elegantly be put away by turning the Nominative case into the Accusative, and the Verb into the Infinitive mood: as, Gaudeo <sup>a</sup> quod tu bene <sup>b</sup> vales: Gaudeo <sup>a</sup> te bene <sup>b</sup> valere, I am glad that thou art in good health. Jubeo <sup>a</sup> ut tu <sup>b</sup> abeas: Jubeo <sup>a</sup> te <sup>b</sup> abire, I bid that thou go hence.

Many antecedents singular, having a Conjunction copulative between them, will have a relative plural, which relative shall agree with the antecedent of the most worthy gender: as, <sup>a</sup> Imperium & <sup>a</sup> dignitas <sup>b</sup> quae petiisti, The rule and dignity which thou hast required.

But in things not apt to have life, the neuter gender is most worthy: yea, and in such a case, though the Substantives or Antecedents be of the masculine, or of the feminine gender, and none of them of the neuter, yet may the Adjective or Relative be put in the neuter gender: as, <sup>a</sup> arcus & <sup>a</sup> calami sunt <sup>b</sup> bona, The bow and arrows be good. <sup>a</sup> Arcus & <sup>a</sup> calami <sup>b</sup> quae fregisti, The bow and arrows which thou hast broken.

## Eight parts of Speech.

### The Case of the Relative.

**W**hen there cometh no Nominative case between the Relative and the Verb, the Relative shall be the Nominative Case to the Verb: as, Miser est <sup>a</sup> qui nummos <sup>b</sup> admiratur, Wretched is that person which is in love with money.

But when there cometh a Nominative case between the Relative and the Verb, the Relative shall be such case as the Verb will have after him: as, Felix <sup>b</sup> quem <sup>a</sup> faciunt aliena <sup>a</sup> pericula cautum, Happy is he whom other mens harms do make to beware.

As the Relative may be the Nominative case to the Verb, so it may be the substantive to the adjective that is joyned with, or that cometh after him: as, Divitias amare noli, <sup>a</sup> quod omnium est <sup>b</sup> sordidissimum, Love not thou riches, which to do is the most beggarly thing in the world.

Nouns Interrogatives and Indefinites follow the rule of the Relative: as, Quis, uter, qualis, quantus, quotus, &c. which evermore come before the Verb like as the Relative doth: as, Hei mihi, qualis erat! Talis erat, <sup>b</sup> qualem nunquam <sup>a</sup> vidi.

Yet here is to be understood and noted, that the Relative is not always governed of the Verb that he cometh before, but sometimes of the Infinitive mood that cometh after the Verb: as, <sup>b</sup> Quibus voluisti me gratias <sup>a</sup> agere, egi, What persons thou wiltst me to thank, I have thanked.

Sometime of a participle: as, <sup>b</sup> Quibus rebus <sup>a</sup> adductus fecisti? With what things moved didst thou is?

Sometime of the Gerund: as, <sup>b</sup> Quae nunc non est <sup>a</sup> narrandi locus, Which things at this present is no time to tell.

Sometime of the Preposition set before him: as, <sup>b</sup> Quem <sup>a</sup> in locum deducta res sit, vides, Unto what state the matter is now brought thou seest.



## An Introduction of the

Sometime of the substantive that it doth accord with: as, *Senties* <sup>b</sup> *qui* <sup>a</sup> *vir* *sem*, Thou shalt perceiue what a fellow I am. Altho in this manner of speaking, *qui* is an indefinite, and not a relative.

Sometime of a noun Partitive or Distributive: as, <sup>b</sup> *Quarum rerum* <sup>a</sup> *utram* *minus* *velim*, non facile possum existimare, Of the which two things whether I would with less will have, I cannot easily esteem.

Sometime it is put in the Genitive case, by reason of a Substantive coming next after him: as, *Ego illum non novi*, <sup>b</sup> *cujus* <sup>a</sup> *causa* *hoc* *incipis*, I know him not for whose cause thou beginnest this matter.

Sometime it is otherwise governed of a noun Substantive: as, *Omnia tibi dabuntur*, <sup>b</sup> *quibus* <sup>a</sup> *opus* *habes*, All things shall be given thee which thou hast need of.

Sometime of an Adverb: as, <sup>b</sup> *Cui* *utram* <sup>a</sup> *obuiam* *procedam*, *nondum* *statui*, Whom whether I will go to meet with, I have not yet determined.

Sometime it is put in the ablative case with this sign *than*, and is governed of the comparative degree coming after him: as, *litere* *virtute*, <sup>b</sup> *qua* *nihil* *est* <sup>a</sup> *melius*, Use vertue, than the which nothing is better.

Sometime it is not governed at all, but is put in the ablative case absolute, as, *Quantus* *erat* *Julius* *Cesar*, <sup>a</sup> <sup>b</sup> *quo* *Imperatore*, *Romani* *primum* *Britanniam* *ingressi* *sunt*? How worthy a man was Julius Cesar, under whose conduct the Romans first entred into Britain.

Also when it signifieth an instrument wherewith a thing is to be done, it is put in the ablative case: as, *Ferrum* *habuit*, <sup>b</sup> *quo* *se* <sup>a</sup> *occideret*, He had a knife wherewith he would have slain himself.

When a Relative cometh between two Substantives of diuers genders, it may indifferently accord

## Eight parts of Speech.

accord with either of them: as, <sup>a</sup> Avis, <sup>b</sup> quæ passer appellatur; or Avis, <sup>b</sup> qui <sup>a</sup> passer appellatur, The bird which is called a sparrow. Yea, though the Substantives be of divers numbers also: as, Estne ea <sup>a</sup> Lutetia, <sup>b</sup> quam nos Parisios dicimus? Is not that called Lutetia, that we do call Paris? Or else, Estne ea Lutetia, <sup>b</sup> quos nos <sup>a</sup> Parisios dicimus?

## Constructions of nouns Substantives.

**W**hen two Substantives come together betokening divers things, the latter shall be the genitive case: as, <sup>a</sup> Facundia <sup>b</sup> Ciceronis, The eloquence of Cicero. <sup>a</sup> Opus <sup>b</sup> Virgilii, The work of Virgil. <sup>a</sup> Amator <sup>b</sup> studiorum, A lover of studies. <sup>a</sup> Dogma <sup>b</sup> Platonis, The opinion of Plato. But if they belong both to one thing, they shall be put both in one case: as, <sup>a</sup> Pater meus <sup>a</sup> vir amat me <sup>b</sup> puerum, My father being a man, loveth me a child.

When the English of this word res is put with an adjective, ye may put away res, and put the adjective in the neuter gender, like a Substantive: as, <sup>a</sup> <sup>b</sup> Multa me impediunt, many things have letted me. And being so put it may be the Substantive to an Adjective: as, <sup>a</sup> Pauca his <sup>b</sup> similia, A few things like unto these. <sup>a</sup> Nonnulla <sup>b</sup> hujusmodi, Many things of like sort.

An Adjective in the neuter gender put alone without a substantive, standeth for a substantive, and may have a genitive case after him, as if it were a substantive: as, <sup>a</sup> Multum <sup>b</sup> lucri, Much gain. <sup>a</sup> Quantum <sup>b</sup> negotii? How much business? <sup>a</sup> Id <sup>b</sup> operis, That work.

Words importing induiment of any quality or property, to the praise or dispraise of a thing, coming after a noun Substantive, or a verb Substantive, may be put in the Ablative case, or in the

## An Introduction of the

genitive: as, <sup>a</sup> Puer <sup>b</sup> bona indolis, or <sup>a</sup> Puer <sup>b</sup> bonae indolis, *A child of a good temper.* <sup>a</sup> Puer <sup>b</sup> boni ingenii, or <sup>a</sup> Puer <sup>b</sup> bono ingenio, *A child of a good wit.*

Opus and usus, when they be Latin for need, require an Ablative case: as, <sup>a</sup> Opus est mihi tuo <sup>b</sup> iudicio, *I have need of thy judgment.* Viginti <sup>b</sup> militibus <sup>a</sup> usus est filio, *My son hath need of twenty pounds.*

## Constructions of Adjectives.

*The Genitive case.*

**A**djectives that signifie desire, knowledge, remembrance, ignorance or forgetting, and such other like, require a genitive case: as, <sup>a</sup> Cupidus <sup>b</sup> auri, *Covetous of money.* <sup>a</sup> Peritus <sup>b</sup> belli, *Expert of warfare.* <sup>a</sup> Ignarus <sup>b</sup> omnium, *Ignorant of all things.* <sup>a</sup> Fidens <sup>b</sup> animi, *Bold of heart.* <sup>a</sup> Dubius <sup>b</sup> mentis, *Doubtful of mind.* <sup>a</sup> Memor <sup>b</sup> praeteriti, *Mindful of that is past.* <sup>a</sup> Reus <sup>b</sup> furti, *Accused of theft.*

Nouns Participles and certain Interrogatives, with certain nouns of number, require a genitive case: as, Aliquis, uter, neuter, nemo, nullus, solus, unus, medius, quisque, quisquis, quicumque, quidam, quis, for aliquis, or quis an Interrogative: as, Unus, duo, tres; primus, secundus, tertius, &c. as, <sup>a</sup> Aliquis <sup>b</sup> nostrum. <sup>a</sup> Primus <sup>b</sup> omnium.

When a question is asked, the answer in Latin must be made by the same case of a noun; pronoun or participle, and the same tense of a Verb, that the question is asked by: as, <sup>a</sup> Cujus est fundus? <sup>b</sup> Vicini. Quid <sup>a</sup> agitur in ludo literario? <sup>b</sup> Studetur. Except a question be asked by Cuius, ja, jum: as, <sup>a</sup> Cuius est sententia? <sup>b</sup> Ciceronis. Or by a word that may govern divers cases: as, <sup>b</sup> Quanti <sup>a</sup> emisti librum? <sup>b</sup> Parvo. Or except I must answer by one of these possessives, Meus, tuus, suus, noster, vester: as, <sup>a</sup> Cujus est domus? <sup>b</sup> non vestra, sed <sup>bb</sup> nostra.

Nouns

## Eight parts of Speech.

Nouns of the comparative and the superlative degree, being put partitively, that is to say, having after them this english of, or among, require a genitive case: as, <sup>a</sup> Aurum <sup>a</sup> mollior est finis, Of the ears, the left is the softer. Cicero <sup>b</sup> Oratorum <sup>a</sup> eloquentissimus, Cicero the most eloquent of Orators.

Nouns of the comparative degree, having than or by after them, do cause the word following to be the ablative case: as, <sup>a</sup> Frigidior <sup>b</sup> glacie, More cold than ice. <sup>a</sup> Doctior <sup>b</sup> multo, Better learned by a great deal. Uno <sup>b</sup> pede <sup>a</sup> altior, Higher by a foot.

### The Dative Case.

Adjectives that betoken profit or disprofit, likeness or unlikeness, pleasure, submitting, or belonging to any thing, require a dative case: as, Labor est <sup>a</sup> utilis <sup>b</sup> corpori, Labor is profitable to the body. <sup>a</sup> Aequalis <sup>b</sup> Hectori, Equal to Hector. <sup>a</sup> Idoneus <sup>b</sup> bello, fit for war. <sup>a</sup> Iucundus <sup>b</sup> omnibus, Pleasant to all persons. <sup>b</sup> Parenti <sup>a</sup> supplex, Suppliant to his father. <sup>b</sup> Mihi <sup>a</sup> proprium, Proper to me.

Likewise nouns adjectives of the passive signification in bilis, and participials in dus: as, <sup>a</sup> Flebilis <sup>a</sup> flendus <sup>b</sup> omnibus, To be lamented of all men. <sup>a</sup> Formidabilis <sup>a</sup> formidandus <sup>b</sup> hosti, To be feared of his enemy.

### The Accusative Case.

The measure of length, breadth, or thickness of any thing, is put after adjectives in the Accusative case, and sometime in the Ablative case: as, Turris <sup>a</sup> alta <sup>b</sup> centum pedes, A tower an hundred feet high. Arbor <sup>a</sup> lata <sup>b</sup> tres digitos, A tree three fingers broad. Liber <sup>a</sup> crassus <sup>b</sup> tres pollices, vel <sup>b</sup> tribus pollicibus, A book three inches thick.

The

# An Introduction of the

## The Ablative case.

**A**djectives signifying fullness, emptiness, plenty or wanting, require an ablative case, and sometime a genitive: as, <sup>b</sup> Copus <sup>a</sup> abundans. <sup>b</sup> Crux <sup>a</sup> thymo <sup>a</sup> plena. <sup>a</sup> Vacuus <sup>b</sup> ira, <sup>bb</sup> ira, <sup>ab</sup> ira. Nulla epistola <sup>a</sup> inanis <sup>b</sup> re aliqua. <sup>a</sup> Ditissimus <sup>b</sup> agri. <sup>b</sup> Stultorum <sup>a</sup> plena sunt omnia. Quis nisi <sup>b</sup> mentis. <sup>a</sup> inops, oblatum respuat aurum. <sup>a</sup> Integer <sup>b</sup> vitæ, <sup>b</sup> scelerisque <sup>a</sup> purus non eget Mauri jaculis nec arcu. <sup>a</sup> Expers <sup>b</sup> omnium Corpus <sup>a</sup> inane <sup>b</sup> animæ.

**These adjectives**, Dignus, indignus, præditus, captus, contentus, with such others, will have an ablative case: as, <sup>a</sup> Dignus <sup>b</sup> honore. <sup>a</sup> Captus <sup>b</sup> oculis. <sup>b</sup> Virtutis <sup>a</sup> præditus. <sup>b</sup> Paucis <sup>a</sup> contentus.

Where note, that Dignus, indignus, and contentus may instead of an ablative case have an infinitive mood of a verb: as, <sup>a</sup> Dignus <sup>b</sup> laudari, worthy to be praised. <sup>a</sup> Contentus in pace <sup>b</sup> vivere, content to live in peace.

## Construction of the Pronoun.

**These genitive cases of the primitives**, Mei, tui, sui, nostri, and vestri, be used when suffering passion is signified: as, <sup>a</sup> Pars <sup>b</sup> tui. <sup>a</sup> Amor <sup>b</sup> mei. But when possession is signified, Meus, tuus, suus, noster, and vester be used: as, <sup>a</sup> Ars <sup>b</sup> tua. <sup>a</sup> Imago <sup>b</sup> tua.

**These genitive cases**, Nostrum, vestrum, be used after distributives, partitives, comparatives, and superlatives: as, <sup>a</sup> Nemo <sup>b</sup> vestrum. <sup>a</sup> Aliquis <sup>b</sup> nostrum. <sup>a</sup> Major <sup>b</sup> vestrum. <sup>a</sup> Maximus natu <sup>b</sup> nostrum.

## Construction of the Verb: and

### first with the Nominative case.

**Sum, forem, fio, existo, and certain verbs past tenses**: as, Dicor, vocor, salutor, appellor, habeor, existimor, videor, with other like, will have such case after

## Eight parts of Speech.

After them, as they have before them: as, <sup>a</sup> Fama <sup>a</sup> est <sup>b</sup> malum, *Fame is an evil thing.* <sup>a</sup> Malus Cuius <sup>a</sup> fit <sup>b</sup> bonus, *an evil person by due ordering of governance is made good.* <sup>a</sup> Croesus <sup>a</sup> vocatur <sup>b</sup> dives, *Cresus is called rich.* <sup>a</sup> Horatius <sup>a</sup> salutatur <sup>b</sup> Poeta, *Horace is saluted by the name of Poet.* Malo <sup>a</sup> te <sup>b</sup> divitem <sup>a</sup> esse quam haberi, *I had rather thou wert rich indeed than so accounted.*

Also verbs that betoken bodily moving, going, resting, or doing, which be properly called verbs of gesture: as, Eo, incedo, curro, sedeo, appareo, bibo, cubo, studeo, dormio, somnio, and such other like, as they have before them a nominative case of the doer or sufferer, so may they have after them a nominative case of a noun or participle, declaring the manner or circumstance of the doing or suffering: as, <sup>a</sup> Incedo <sup>b</sup> claudus, *I go lame.* <sup>a</sup> Petrus <sup>a</sup> dormit <sup>b</sup> securus, *Peter sleepeth void of care.* <sup>a</sup> Tu <sup>a</sup> cubas <sup>b</sup> supinus, *Thou liest in bed with the face upward.* <sup>a</sup> Somnias <sup>b</sup> vigilans, *Thou dreamest waking.* <sup>a</sup> Studeto <sup>b</sup> stans, *Study thou standing.* And likewise in the accusative case: as, Non decet <sup>a</sup> quenquam <sup>a</sup> meire <sup>b</sup> currentem, aut mandentem, *It doth not become any man to pise running or eating.*

And generally, when the word that goeth before the verb, and the word that cometh after the verb belong both to one thing, that is to say, have respect either to other, or depend either of other, they shall be put both in one case, whether the verb be transitive or intransitive, of what kind soever the verb be: as, <sup>a</sup> Loquor <sup>b</sup> frequens, *I speak often.* <sup>a</sup> Taceo <sup>b</sup> multus, *I hold my peace much.* <sup>a</sup> Scribo epistolas <sup>b</sup> rarissimas, *I write letters very seldom.* Ne <sup>a</sup> assuescas <sup>a</sup> bibere vinum <sup>b</sup> jejunos, *Accustom not thy self to drink wine next thy heart, or not having eaten somewhat before.*

The



# An Introduction of the

## The Genitive case.

**T**his verb *Sum*, when it betokeneth or importeth possession, owing or otherwise pertaining to a thing, as a token, property, duty or guilt, it causeth the noun, pronoun or participle following to be put in the Genitive case: as, *Hæc vestis a est b patris*, This garment is my fathers. *b Insipientis a est dicere, non putaram*, It is the property of a fool to say I had not thought. *Extrema a est b demenda discere dediscenda*, It is a point of the greatest folly in the world, to learn things that must afterward be learned otherwise. *b Orantis a est nihil in coelestia cogitare*, It is the duty of a man that is saying his prayers, to have mind on nothing but heavenly things. Except that these Pronouns, *Meus, tuus, suus, noster*, and *vester*, shall in such manner of speaking be used in the Nominative case: as, *Hic codex a est b meus*, This book is mine. *Hæc domus a est b vestra*, This house is yours. *Non a est b mentiri b meum*, It is not my guilt (or property) to lye. *b Nostrum a est injuriam non inferre*, It is our parts not to do wrong. *b Tuum a est omnia juxta pati*, It is thy part (or duty) to suffer all things alike.

Verbs that betoken to esteem or regard, require a Genitive case, betokening the value: as, *b Parva a ducitur probitas*, Honesty is reckoned little worth. *b Maximi a penditur nobilitas*, Nobleness of birth is very much regarded.

Verbs of accusing, condemning, warning, purging, quitting or assailing, will have a Genitive case, of the crime, or of the cause, or of the thing that one is accused, condemned, or warned of: or else an Ablative case most commonly without a preposition: as, *Hic b furti se a alligat, vel b furto. a Ad-*

monuit



## Eight parts of Speech.

monuit me <sup>b</sup> errati, vel <sup>bb</sup> errato. <sup>b</sup> De Pecuniis repetundis <sup>a</sup> damnatus est.

Satago, misereor, miseresco, require a **Genitive case**: as, <sup>b</sup> Rerum suarum <sup>a</sup> satagit. <sup>a</sup> Misere <sup>b</sup> mei Deus.

Reminiscor, obliviscor, recordor, and memini, will have a **Genitive**, or an **Accusative case**: as, <sup>a</sup> Reminiscor <sup>b</sup> historiae. <sup>a</sup> Obliviscor <sup>b</sup> carminis. <sup>a</sup> Recordor <sup>b</sup> pueritiam. <sup>a</sup> Obliviscor <sup>b</sup> lectionem. <sup>a</sup> Memini <sup>b</sup> tui, vel <sup>bb</sup> te, **I remember thee.** <sup>a</sup> Memini <sup>b</sup> de te, **I speak of thee.** <sup>a</sup> Egeo, or <sup>a</sup> indigeo <sup>b</sup> tui, vel <sup>bb</sup> te, **I have need of thee.** <sup>a</sup> Potior <sup>b</sup> urbis, **I conquer the City.** <sup>a</sup> Potior <sup>b</sup> voto, **I obtain my desire.**

### *The Dative case.*

**A**ll manner of verbs put **acquisitively**, that is to say, with these tokens *to* or *for* after them, will have a **dative case**: as, Non <sup>b</sup> omnibus <sup>a</sup> dormio, **I sleep not to all men.** <sup>b</sup> Huic <sup>a</sup> habeo, non <sup>b</sup> tibi, **I have it for this man, and not for thee.**

To this rule do also belong Verbs betokening to profit, or disprofit: as, Commodo, incommodo, noceo.

**Compare**: as, Comparo, compono, confero,

**Give or restore**: as, Dono, reddo, refero.

**Promise or to pay**: as, Promitto, polliceor, solvo.

**Command or shew**: as, Impero, indico, monstro.

**Trust**: as, Fido, confido, fidem habeo. (no.

**Obeys or to be against**: as, Obedio, adulator, repug-

**Threaten or to be angry with**: as, Minor, indignor, irascor.

Also Sum with his compounds, except Possum. Also Verbs compounded with Satis, benè, and malè, as, Satisfacio, benefacio, malefacio. Finally certain Verbs compound with these Prepositions, Præ, ad, con, sub, ante, post, ob, in, and inter, will have a **Dative case**: as, Præluceo, adjaceo, condono, sub-  
oleo,

## An Introduction of the

oleo, antestō, posthabeo, objicio, insulto, interfero.

This Verb Sum, es, fui, may oftentimes be set for habeo, and then the word that seemeth in the English to be the nominative case, shall be put in the dative, and the word that seemeth to be the accusative case, shall be the nominative: as, <sup>a</sup> Est <sup>b</sup> mihi <sup>a</sup> mater, I have a Mother, Non <sup>a</sup> est <sup>b</sup> mihi <sup>a</sup> argentum, I have no money. But if Sum be the Infinitive mood, this nominative shall be turned into the accusative: as, Scio <sup>b</sup> tibi non <sup>a</sup> esse <sup>a</sup> argentum, I know thou hast no money.

Also when Sum hath after him a Nominative case, and a Dative, the word that is the Nominative case may be also the Dative: So that Sum may in such manner of speaking be construed with a double Dative case: as, <sup>a</sup> Sum <sup>b</sup> tibi <sup>bb</sup> praesidio, I am to thee a safeguard. Hæc res <sup>a</sup> est <sup>b</sup> mihi <sup>bb</sup> voluptari, This thing is to me a pleasure.

And not only Sum, but also many other verbs may in such manner of speaking have a double Dative case, one of the person, and another of the thing: as, <sup>a</sup> Do <sup>b</sup> tibi vestem <sup>bb</sup> pigriori. <sup>a</sup> Verto hæc <sup>b</sup> tibi <sup>bb</sup> vitio. Hoc tu <sup>b</sup> tibi <sup>bb</sup> laudi <sup>a</sup> ducis.

*The Accusative case.*

**V**erbs transitives are all such as have after them an Accusative case of the doer or sufferer, whether they be active, commune, or dependent: as, Ufus <sup>b</sup> promptos <sup>a</sup> facit. Foemina <sup>a</sup> ludificantur <sup>b</sup> viros. <sup>a</sup> Largitur <sup>b</sup> pecuniam.

Also verbs neuters may have an Accusative case of their own signification: as, Endymionis <sup>b</sup> somnum <sup>a</sup> dormis. <sup>a</sup> Gaudeo <sup>b</sup> gaudium. <sup>a</sup> Vivo <sup>b</sup> vitam.

Verbs of asking, teaching and arraying, will have two Accusative cases, one of the sufferer, and another of the thing: as, <sup>a</sup> Rogo <sup>b</sup> te <sup>bb</sup> pecuniam. <sup>a</sup> Doceo <sup>b</sup> te <sup>bb</sup> literas. <sup>b</sup> Quod <sup>bb</sup> te jamdudum <sup>a</sup> hortor. <sup>a</sup> Exuo <sup>b</sup> me <sup>bb</sup> gladum.

*The*

# Eight parts of Speech.

## The Ablative case.

**A**ll verbs require an Ablative case of the instrument, put with this sign *with* before it, or of the cause, or of the manner of doing: as, <sup>a</sup> Ferit eum <sup>b</sup> gladio. <sup>a</sup> Taceo <sup>b</sup> metu. Summa <sup>b</sup> eloquentia causam <sup>a</sup> egit.

The word of price is put after verbs in the Ablative case: as, <sup>a</sup> Vendidi <sup>b</sup> auro. <sup>a</sup> Emptus sum <sup>b</sup> argento. Except these genitives when they be put alone without Substantives: Tanti, quanti, pluris, minoris, tantivis, tantidem, quantivis, quantilibet, quanticunque: as, <sup>b</sup> Quanti <sup>a</sup> mercatus es hunc equum? Certè <sup>b</sup> pluris quam <sup>a</sup> vellem. Saving that after verbs of price we shall always use these adverbs, Carius, vilis, melius, and peius instead of their casualls.

Verbs of plenty or scarceness, filling, emptying, loading or unloading, will have an ablative case: as, <sup>a</sup> Affluis <sup>b</sup> opibus. <sup>a</sup> Cares <sup>b</sup> virtute. <sup>a</sup> Expleo te <sup>b</sup> fabulis. <sup>a</sup> Spoliavit me <sup>b</sup> bonis omnibus. <sup>a</sup> Oneras stomachum <sup>b</sup> cibo. <sup>a</sup> Levabo te hoc <sup>b</sup> onere. Likewise Utor, fungor, fruor, potior, lætor, gaudeo, dignor, muto, munero, communico, afficio, prosequor, impertio, impertior.

Verbs that betoken receiving or distance, or taking away, will have an Ablative case, with *a*, *ab*, *è*, *ex*, or *de*: as, <sup>a</sup> Accipit literas <sup>b</sup> à Petro. <sup>a</sup> Audivi <sup>b</sup> ex nuncio. Longè <sup>a</sup> distat <sup>b</sup> à nobis. <sup>a</sup> Eripui te <sup>b</sup> è malis. And this ablative after verbs of taking away may be turned into a dative: as, <sup>a</sup> Subtraxit <sup>b</sup> mihi cingulum. <sup>a</sup> Eripuit <sup>b</sup> illi vitam.

Verbs of comparing or exceeding, may have an Ablative case of the word that signifieth the measure of exceeding: as, <sup>a</sup> Præfero hunc multis <sup>b</sup> gradibus, I prefer this man by many degrees. <sup>b</sup> Paulo intervallo illum <sup>a</sup> superat, He is beyond the other but a little space.

## An Introduction of the

**A** Noun, or a Pronoun Substantive, joyned with a Participle, expressed or understood, and having none other word whereof it may be governed, it shall be put in the Ablative case absolute: as, <sup>a</sup> Rege <sup>b</sup> veniente, hostes fugerunt, The King coming, the enemies fled. <sup>a</sup> Me <sup>b</sup> ducé vinces, I being Captain, thou shalt overcome.

And it may be resolved by any of these words, dum, quum, quando, si, quanquam, postquam: as, <sup>a</sup> Rege <sup>b</sup> veniente; *id est*, Dum veniret Rex. <sup>a</sup> Me <sup>b</sup> ducé; *id est*, Si ego dux fuero.

## Constructions of Passives.

**A** Verb Passive will have after him an Ablative case with a preposition, or sometime a Dative of the doer: as, Virgilius <sup>a</sup> legitur <sup>b</sup> à me. <sup>b</sup> Tibi fama <sup>a</sup> petatur. And the same Ablative or Dative, shall be the Nominative case to the Verb, if it be made by the active: as, <sup>a</sup> Ego <sup>b</sup> lego Virgilium. <sup>b</sup> Petas <sup>a</sup> tu famam.

## Gerunds.

**G** ERUNDS and SUPINES, will have such cases as the Verbs that they come of: as, Otium <sup>a</sup> scribendi <sup>b</sup> literas. Ad <sup>a</sup> consulendum <sup>b</sup> tibi. <sup>a</sup> Auditum <sup>b</sup> poetarum.

**W** HEN the English of the Infinitive Word cometh after any of these Nouns Substantives, Studium, causa, tempus, gratia, otium, occasio, libido, spes, opportunitas, voluntas, modus, ratio, gestus, satietas, potestas, licentia, consuetudo, consilium, vis, norma, amor, cupido, locus, and others like, if the verb should be of the active voice, it shall be made by the Gerund in di. And the same Gerund in di, is used also after certain adjectives: as, <sup>a</sup> Cupidus <sup>b</sup> visendi. <sup>a</sup> Certus <sup>b</sup> eundi. <sup>a</sup> Peritus <sup>b</sup> jaculandi. <sup>a</sup> Gnarus <sup>b</sup> bellandi.

When

## Eight parts of Speech

**W**hen ye have an english of the participle of the present tense, with this sign of *oz* with coming after a noun adjectiue, it shall in Latin making be put in the gerund in *do*: as, <sup>a</sup> Defessus sum <sup>b</sup> ambulando, I am weary of walking.

Also the english of the participle of the present tense coming without a Substantiue, with this sign in *oz* by, before him, shall in Latin making be put in the gerund in *do*: as, Caesar, <sup>b</sup> dando, <sup>b</sup> sublevando, <sup>b</sup> ignoscendo, gloriam <sup>a</sup> adeptus est: <sup>b</sup> In apparando totum hunc <sup>a</sup> consumunt diem: And the same gerund in *do* is used either without a preposition, *oz* with one of these prepositions, A, ab, de, e, ex, cum, in, pro: as, Deterrent <sup>a</sup> <sup>b</sup> bibendo, <sup>a</sup> Ab <sup>b</sup> amando. Cogitat <sup>a</sup> de <sup>b</sup> edendo. Ratio bene scribendi <sup>a</sup> cum <sup>b</sup> loquendo conjuncta est.

**T**he English of the Infinitiue moov, coming after a reason, and shewing the cause of a reason, may be put in the gerund in *dum*: as, Dies mihi ut satis sit <sup>a</sup> ad <sup>b</sup> agendum, vereor: I fear that a whole day will not be enough for me to do my business.

The gerund in *dum* is used after one of these prepositions, Ad, ob, propter, inter, ante: as, <sup>a</sup> Ad <sup>b</sup> capiendum hostes. <sup>a</sup> Ob (vel <sup>a</sup> propter) <sup>b</sup> redimendum captivos: <sup>a</sup> Inter <sup>b</sup> coenandum. <sup>a</sup> Ante <sup>b</sup> damnandum.

And when ye have this english *must oz ought* in a reason, where it seemeth to be made by this verb oportet, it may be put in the gerund in *dum*, with this verb est set impersonally: and then the word that seemeth in the English to be the Nominatiue case, shall be put in the dative: as, <sup>a</sup> Abundum est <sup>b</sup> mihi, I must go hence.

Supines

## The Construction of the

### Supines.

**T**he first Supine hath his active signification and is put after Verbs and Participles that betoken making to a place: as, <sup>a</sup> Eo <sup>b</sup> cubitum. <sup>b</sup> Spectatum <sup>a</sup> admissi, risum teneatis amici?

The latter Supine hath his passive signification, and is put after Nouns Adjectives: as, Dignus, indignus, turpis, foedus, proclivis, facilis, odiosus, mirabilis, optimus, and such like. And the same Supine may also be turned into the Infinitive mood Passive: as it may be indifferently said in Latin, <sup>a</sup> Facile <sup>b</sup> factu, or <sup>a</sup> Facile <sup>b</sup> fieri, Easy to be done. <sup>a</sup> Turpe <sup>b</sup> dictu, or <sup>a</sup> Turpe <sup>b</sup> dici, Unhonest to be spoken.

### The Time.

**N**ouns that betoken part of Time, be commonly put in the Ablative case: as, <sup>b</sup> Nocte <sup>a</sup> vigilas. <sup>b</sup> Luce <sup>a</sup> dormis. But Nouns that betoken continual term of time, without ceasing or intermission, be commonly used in the Accusative case: as, <sup>b</sup> Sexaginta annos <sup>a</sup> natus. <sup>b</sup> Hyemem totam <sup>a</sup> stertis.

### Space of Place.

**N**ouns that betoken space between place and place be commonly put in the accusative case: as, <sup>b</sup> Pedem hinc nē <sup>a</sup> discesseris, Go not thou a foot from this place.

### A Place.

**N**ouns Appellatives, or names of great places, be put with a preposition, if they follow a Verb that signifieth in a place, to a place, from a place, or by a place: as, <sup>a</sup> Vivo <sup>b</sup> in Anglia. <sup>a</sup> Veni <sup>b</sup> per Galliam <sup>bb</sup> in Italiam. <sup>a</sup> Proficiscor <sup>b</sup> ex urbe.

In a place, or at a place, if the place be a proper name.



## Eight parts of Speech.

name of the first or second declension, and the singular number, it shall be put in the Genitive case: as, <sup>a</sup> Vixit <sup>b</sup> Londini. <sup>a</sup> Studuit <sup>b</sup> Oxonia.

And these nouns, Humi, domi, militie, belli, be likewise used: as, <sup>a</sup> Procumbit <sup>b</sup> humi bos. <sup>b</sup> Militie <sup>a</sup> enutritus est. <sup>b</sup> Domi <sup>bb</sup> bellique otiosi <sup>a</sup> vivitis.

But if the place be of the third declension, or the plural number, it shall be put in the dative, or in the ablative case: as, <sup>a</sup> Militavit <sup>b</sup> Carthagini, or <sup>bb</sup> Carthagine. <sup>b</sup> Athenis <sup>a</sup> natus est. Likewise we say, <sup>b</sup> Ruri, or <sup>bb</sup> Rure <sup>a</sup> educatus est.

To a place, if the place be a proper name, it shall be put in the accusative case without a preposition: as, <sup>a</sup> Eo <sup>b</sup> Romam. Likewise, <sup>a</sup> Confero me <sup>b</sup> domum. <sup>a</sup> Recipio me <sup>b</sup> rus.

From a place, or by a place, if the place be a proper name, it shall be put in the ablative case without a preposition: as, <sup>a</sup> Discessit <sup>b</sup> Londino. <sup>a</sup> Profectus est <sup>b</sup> Londino (*vel per Londinum*) Cantabrigiam. Domus and Rus be likewise used: as, <sup>a</sup> Abiit <sup>b</sup> domo. <sup>b</sup> Rure <sup>a</sup> reversus est.

## Impersonals.

**A** Verb Impersonal hath no Nominative case before him, and this word it or there is commonly his sign: as, Decet, It becometh. <sup>a</sup> Oportet <sup>b</sup> aliquem esse, There must be some body. But if he hath neither of these words before him, then the word that seemeth to be the Nominative case, shall be such case as the verb Impersonal will have after him: as, <sup>b</sup> Me <sup>a</sup> oportet, I must. <sup>b</sup> Tibi <sup>a</sup> licet, Thou mayest.

Interest, refert, and est for interest, require a genitive case of all casual words, except mea, tua, sua, nostra, vestra, and eua, the Ablative cases of the



## The Construction of the

**pronouns possessives**: as, <sup>a</sup> Interest <sup>b</sup> omnium recte agere. <sup>b</sup> Tua <sup>a</sup> refert teipsum nosse.

**Certain Impersonals require a dative case**: as, Liber, licet, patet, liquet, constat, placet, expedit, prodest, sufficit, vacat, accidit, convenit, contingit, and other like. Some will have an accusative case only: as, delectat, decet, iuvat, oportet. Some bestoe the accusative case will have also a genitive: as, <sup>bb</sup> Nostri <sup>b</sup> nosmet <sup>a</sup> poenitet. <sup>b</sup> Me <sup>bb</sup> civitatis <sup>a</sup> tædet. <sup>a</sup> Pudet <sup>b</sup> me <sup>bb</sup> negligentia. <sup>a</sup> Misereb <sup>b</sup> me <sup>bb</sup> tui. <sup>b</sup> Me <sup>bb</sup> illorum <sup>a</sup> miserescit.

**Verbs Impersonals of the passive voice**, being formed of neuters, do govern such cases as the verbs neuters which they come of: as, <sup>a</sup> Parcatur <sup>b</sup> sumptui, Let cost be spared. Because we say, <sup>a</sup> Parcamus <sup>b</sup> pecuniaz, Let us spare cost.

**A verb Impersonal of the passive voice**, hath like case as other verbs passives have: as, <sup>a</sup> Benefit mulcis <sup>b</sup> à principe. Yet many times the case is not expressed, but understood: as, Maxima vi <sup>a</sup> certatur, *subaudi*, <sup>b</sup> ab illis.

When a deed is signified to be done of many, the verb being a verb neuter, we may well change the verb neuter into the impersonal in tur: as, <sup>b</sup> In ignem posita est, <sup>a</sup> fletur.

## A Participle.

**Participles govern such cases as the verbs that they come of**: as, <sup>a</sup> Fruiturus <sup>b</sup> amicis. <sup>a</sup> Consulens <sup>b</sup> tibi. <sup>a</sup> Diligendus <sup>b</sup> ab omnibus.

Here note, that participles may four manner of ways be changed into nouns. The first is, when the voice of a participle is construed with another case than the verb that it cometh of: as, <sup>a</sup> Appeten <sup>b</sup> vini, Græpe of wine.

## Eight parts of Speech.

The second when it is compounded with a preposition, which the verb that it cometh of cannot be compounded withal: as, *Indoctus*, *Innocens*.

The third, when it formeth all the degrees of comparison: as, *Amans*, *amantior*, *amantissimus*. *Doctus*, *doctior*, *doctissimus*.

The fourth when it hath no respect nor express difference of time: as, *Homo laudatus*, *amandus*, *id est*, *amari dignus*, *child worthy to be loved*. And all these are properly called nouns participials.

Participles when they be changed into nouns require a Genitive case: as, *Fugitans* <sup>b</sup> *litium*, *Indoctus* <sup>b</sup> *pila*, *Cupientissimus* <sup>b</sup> *tui*, *Lactis* <sup>a</sup> *abundans*.

These participial voices, *perosus*, *exosus*, *pertaxus*, have always the active signification, when they govern an accusative case: as, *Exosus* <sup>b</sup> *levitiam*, *Detesting cruelty*, *Vitium* <sup>a</sup> *pertaxus*, *treary of life*.

## The Adverb.

**A**dverbs of quantity, time and place, do require a Genitive case: as, *Mileum* <sup>b</sup> *lucris*, *Tunc* <sup>b</sup> *temporis*, *Ubique* <sup>b</sup> *gentium*.

Certain adverbs will have a Dative case, like as the nouns that they come of: as, *Venit* <sup>a</sup> *obviam* <sup>b</sup> *illi*, *Canit* <sup>a</sup> *similiter* <sup>b</sup> *huic*.

These datives be used adverbially, *Tempori*, *luci*, *vesperi*: as, *Tempori surgendum*, *Vesperi cubandum*, *Luci laborandum*.

Certain adverbs will have an accusative case of the Preposition that they come of: as, *Propius* <sup>b</sup> *urbem*, *Proxime* <sup>b</sup> *castra*.

Where note that Prepositions, when they be set without a case, or else do form the degrees of comparison, be changed into Adverbs.

# The Construction of the, &c.

## The Conjunction.

**C**onjunctions Copulatives and Disjunctives, and these four, Quam, nisi, praterquam, an, couple like cases: as, <sup>a</sup> Xenophon & <sup>a</sup> Plato fuere <sup>b</sup> equals. And sometimes they be put between divers cases: as, <sup>a</sup> Saulus <sup>b</sup> Roma & <sup>bb</sup> Athenis. Est <sup>a</sup> liber <sup>b</sup> meus & <sup>bb</sup> fratris. <sup>a</sup> Emi fundum centum <sup>b</sup> nummis & <sup>bb</sup> plurie.

**C**onjunctions Copulatives and Disjunctives most commonly join like moods and tenses together: as, <sup>a</sup> Petrus & Johannes <sup>b</sup> precabantur & <sup>bb</sup> docebant. And sometimes divers tenses: as, Et <sup>b</sup> habetur & <sup>bb</sup> referetur tibi <sup>a</sup> me <sup>a</sup> gratia.

## The Preposition.

**S**ometime this preposition is not expressed, but understood, and the casual word nevertheless put in the Ablative case: as, Habeo te <sup>b</sup> loco parentis: *id est*, <sup>a</sup> in <sup>b</sup> loco.

**A** verb compound, sometime requireth the case of the preposition that he is compounded withal: as, <sup>a</sup> Exeo <sup>b</sup> domo. <sup>a</sup> Praterco <sup>b</sup> te salutatum. <sup>a</sup> Adeo <sup>b</sup> templum.

## The Interjection.

**C**ertain Interjections require a nominative case: as, <sup>a</sup> O festus <sup>b</sup> dies hominis. Certain a Dative: as, <sup>a</sup> Hei <sup>b</sup> mihi. Certain an Accusative: as, <sup>a</sup> Heu <sup>b</sup> stirpem invisam. Certain a vocative: as, <sup>a</sup> Proh sancte <sup>b</sup> Jupiter. And the same Proh will have an Accusative case: as, <sup>a</sup> Proh Deum atque hominum <sup>b</sup> fidem.

**F I N I S.**

# GUILIELMI LIIII

ad suos Discipulos monita Pedagogica,  
seu *Carmen de Moribus.*

**Q**ui mihi discipulus Puer es, cupis atque ducere,  
Huc ades, hæc animo concipe dicta tuo.  
Mane citus lectum fuge, mollem discere somnum;  
Templa petas supplex, & venerare Deum.  
Attamen in primis facies sit lota manisque;  
Sint nitidæ vestes, comæque casaries;  
Deficiam fugiens, cum te schola nostra vocarit,  
Adsis; nulla pigra sit tibi causa moræ.  
Me Praeceptorem cum videris, ore saluta,  
Et condiscipulos ordine quosque tuos.  
Tu quoque fac sedeas, ubi te sedisse iubemus;  
Inque loco, nisi sis iustus abire, manes.  
Ac magis ut quisque est doctrinæ munere clarus,  
Sic magis is clarâ sede locandus erit.  
Scalpellum, calami, atramentum, charta, libelli,  
Sint semper studiis arma parata tuis.  
Si quid dictabo, scribes; at singula recte:  
Nec macula, aut scriptis menda sit ulla tuis.  
Sed tua nec laceris dictata aut carmina chartis  
Mandes, quæ libris inferuisse decet.  
Sæpe recognoscas tibi lecta, animoque revolvās;  
Si dubites, nunc hos consule, nunc alios.  
Qui dubitat, qui sæpe rogat, mea dicta tenebit;  
Is, qui nil dubitat, nil capit inde boni.  
Disce puer quæso, noli dediscere quicquam,  
Nè tædens te insinulet conscia desidia.  
Sisque animo attentus; quid enim docuisse juvabit,  
Si mea non firmo pectore verba premas?  
Nil tam difficile est, quod non solertia vincat;  
Invigila, & parva est gloria militiæ.  
Nam veluti flores tellus nec semina profert,  
Nisi sit continuo victa labore manus:  
Sic puer, ingenium si non exercitet, ipsum  
Tempus & amittit, spem simul ingenii.  
Est etiam semper lex in sermone tenenda,  
Nè nos offendant improba garrulitas.  
Incumbens studio, submissâ voce loqueris;  
Nobis dum reddis, voce canorus eris.  
Et quæcunque mihi reddis, discantur ad unguem  
Singula & abjecto verbula redde libro.  
Nec verbum quicquam dicturo suggerat ullum;  
Quod puero exitium non mediocre parit.

# CARMEN DE MORIBUS.

Si quicquam rogitō, sic respondere studebis,  
Ut laudem dicis & merere decus.  
Non linguā celeri nimis, aut laudabere tardā;  
Est virtus medium, quod tenuisse iuvat.  
Et quoties loquerris, memor esto loquare Latine;  
Et veluti scopulos barbara verba fuge.  
Præterea, socios, quoties te cunque rogabunt,  
Instrue; & ignaros ad mea vota trahe.  
Qui docet indoctos, licet indoctissimus esset,  
Ipse brevi reliquis doctior esse queat.  
Sed tu nec stolidos imitabere Grammaticastros,  
Ingens Romani dedecus eloqui:  
Quorum tam fatuus nepos, aut tam barbarus ore est,  
Quem non autorem barbara turba probet.  
Grammaticas recte si vis cognoscere leges,  
Discere si cupias cultius ore loqui;  
Addiscas veterum clarissima scripta virorum,  
Et quos autores turba Latina docet:  
Nunc te Virgilius, nunc ipse Terentius optat,  
Nunc simul amplecti te Ciceronis opus;  
Quos qui non didicit, nil præter somnia vidit,  
Certat & in tenebris vivere Cimmeriis.  
Sunt quos delectat (Studio virtutis honestæ  
Posthabito) nugis tempora conterere:  
Sunt quibus est cordi, manibus, pedibusve sodales,  
Aut alio quovis sollicitare modo:  
Est alius, qui se diu clarum sanguine jactet,  
Insulto reliquis improbat ore genus.  
Te tam prava sequi nolim vestigia morum;  
Nè tandem factis præmia digna feras.  
Nil dabis aut vendes, nil permutabis teneſve;  
Ex damno alterius commoda nulla feres.  
Insuper & nummos, irritamenta malorum,  
Mitte aliis; puerum nil nisi pura decent.  
Clamor, rixa, joci, mendacia, furta, cachinni,  
Sint procul à vobis; Martis & arma procul.  
Nil penitus dicēs, quod turpe, aut non sit honestum;  
Est vitæ ac pariter janua lingua necis.  
Ingens crede nefas cuiquam maledicta refetre,  
Jurare aut magni numina sacra Dei.  
Denique servabis res omnes, atque libellos,  
Et tecum quoties isque reddique feres.  
Effuge vel causas, faciunt quæcunque nocentem,  
In quibus & nobis displicuisse potes.

William Lilly

BREVISSIMA  
INSTITUTIO,

Seu,

Ratio Grammatices  
cognoscenda, ad om-  
nium puerorum utili-  
tatem præscripta.

*Quam solara Regia Ma-  
jestas in omnibus Scholis  
docendam præcipit.*

LONDINI,

Excudit Guilielmus Nortonus  
Regius in Latinis, Græcis  
& Hebraicis Typo-  
graphus.

1699.





Studium Grammatices omnibus esse necessarium.

**G**rammatices labor est parvus, sed fructus in illa est  
 Non parvus : Parva hac discito, parve puer.  
 Nemo est tam doctus, qui non cognoverit ista :  
 Cur pudeat pueros ista labore sequi ?





# DE GRAMMATICA & ejus partibus.

**G**RAMMATICA est rectè scribendi  
atque loquendi Ars.  
GRAMMATICÆ  
quatuor sunt partes.  
Orthographia, } } Syntaxis,  
Etymologia, } } Profodia.

## DE ORTHOGRAPHIA.

**O**RTHOGRAPHIA est rectè scribendi  
ratio; quâ docemur, quibus quæque dictio  
sit formanda literis: ut, Lectio, non Lexio;  
ab ὀρθὸς rectus, & γράφειν scriptura.

### De Literis.

**E**X viginti duabus literis quinque sunt vocales: *a, e, i, o, u*: nam y Græca est. Ex quibus variè dis-  
positis coalescunt diphthongi quinque  

<i>a</i> <i>au</i> <i>æ</i> <i>ei</i> <i>eu</i>	<i>ut</i>	<i>Muse</i> <i>Audio</i> <i>Cæsum</i> <i>Hei</i> <i>Euge.</i>	Reliquæ literæ con-	Vocales.
			sonantes appellantur:	Diph-
			quarum novem sunt	thongi.
			mutæ; <i>b, c, d, f, g,</i>	Conso-
			<i>k, p, q, r.</i>	nantes.

Septem autem semivocales: *l, m, n, r, s, x, z.*

Semivo-  
Ex cales.

Liquidæ

S.

X &amp; Z.

Ex quibus quatuor vocantur etiam liquidæ, *l, m, n, r*.  
S. verò suæ cujusdam potestatis litera est: quæ interdum etiam liquefit. X & Z duplices sunt consonantes, atque etiam *I* inter duas vocales.

J &amp; V.

consonantes

liquando

K. Y.

&amp; Z.

H aspiratio.

Adduntur etiam consonantibus *F* & *V*, quando sibi vel aliis vocalibus in eadem syllaba præponuntur; ut, Juno, Jovis; Voluntas, Vultus.

*X, y, & z*, latinis dictionibus nunquam admiscuntur.

*H*, propriè quidem litera non est, sed aspirationis nota. Apud Poetas autem interdum consonantis vim obtinet.

Præponitur autem vocalibus omnibus, ut, Hamus, hebenus, hiatus, homo, humus, hymnus; consonantibus verò nullis; rectè itaque enunciamus

Huiculus, } trissyl- } Hieronymus, } pentasyll-  
Hiacchus, } laba. } Hieremias, } laba.

At in latinis dictionibus interdum *H* postponitur; ut, Charus, charitas; Pulcher, pulchritudo.

Bisariam pinguntur literæ; majusculis scilicet characteribus, & minusculis. Majusculis inchoantur sententia: ut, *Deum time, Regem honora*; & propria nomina: ut, *Henricus, Anglia*.

Diligenter observari oportebit, quæ dictiones diphthongis scribantur, nam hæ quidem vel scribi omnino vel signari debent: ut, *Muse præsumt*, vel *Muse præsumt*.

Literæ  
majusculæ.

ut	{	A. Aulus	P. C. Patres conscripti.
		C. Caius.	Q. Quintus, Quæstor, Quirites.
		D. Decius.	R. P. Respublica.
		G. Gaius.	Sp. Spurius.
		L. Lucius.	Sex. Sextus. (Romanus.
		M. Marcus	S. P. Q. R. Senat. populûsque
		P. Publius.	T. Titus.
		P. R. Populus Romanus.	T. C. Tua clementia. Et ejus generis infinita.

# ORTHOGRAPHIA. 3

In numeris verò significant.

I	1	Unum.
V	5	Quinque.
IX	9	Novem.
X	10	Decem.
XL	40	Quadraginta.
L	50	Quinquaginta.
XC	90	Nonaginta.
C	100	Centum.
D	500	Quingenta.
M	1000	Mille.

## De syllabarum distinctionibus.

**R** Ecce scripturo discendum est imprimis, syllaba inter scribendum aptè distinguere atque connectere. In simplicibus vocibus, *bd*, vocali sequenti adherent: ut, A—bdomen, A—bdera.

Quam quidem rationem sequuntur & ista;

et	ut	Do-ctus;	gm	ut	A-gmen.
		San-ctus;	gn		I-gnis.
ps	ut	Scri-psi;	st	ut	Ve-ster.
		Sum-psi;			Magi-ster.
sc	ut	Di-fcis;	xi	ut	An-xius.
		Di-fco;			Di-xi. &
tn	ut	Æ-tna;			similia.

Inter *m* & *n* non interseritur *p*: Malè igitur pingetur Sompnus, pro somnus: Columpna, pro columna.

Post *x* non scribitur *f*: ut, Excribo, exolvo; non exscribo, exsolvo. In compositis cum præpositione auribus & euphoniæ serviendum est:

ut	Occurro	potius, quàm	Obcurro.
	Officio		Obficio.
	Aufero		Abfero.
	Abstineo		Austineo.
Et contra	Obtineo	non autem	Ottineo.
	Obrepo		Otrepo.

Atque

# 4 ORTHOEPIA.

Atque hujus rei gratiâ, etiam consonantes in compositione aliquando interferuntur: ut, Redamo, redeo, ambigo, ambio.

## DE ORTHOEPIA.

Orthoe-  
pia.



Rthographiæ affinis est Orthoepia, hoc est emendatè rectèque loquendi ratio, ab ὀρθοῦς rectus, & ἔπος verbum.

Hic imprimis curandum est, ut præceptores tenera ac balbutientia puerorum ora sic effingant & figurent, nè vel continuâ linguæ volubilitate ita sermonem præcipient, ut nunquam, nisi ubi spiritus deficit, orationem claudant: vel contra, ad singulas quasque voces longâ inspiratione, consilecant, ructu, risu, singultu, screatu, vel tussi, sermonis tenorem ineptè dirimentes.

Cæterum antè omnia deterrendi sunt pueri ab iis vitiis quæ nostro vulgo penè propria esse videntur: cuiusmodi sunt Iotacismus, Lambdacismus, Ischnotes, Traulismus, Plateasmus, & similia.

Iotacif-  
mus.

Iotacismus dicitur, quando ( I ) litera pleniore sono & supra justum decorum extenditur; quo vitio ex nostratibus maximè laborant Angli septentrionales.

Lamb-  
dacif-  
mus.

Lambdacismus est, ubi quis ( l ) nimis operosè sonat: ut Ellucet, pro elucet: Sallvus, pro salvus.

Nostrati vulgò diversum vitium impingitur, nempe quòd hanc literam pinguius justo pronunciant, dum

pro	{	Multus,	{	auditur	{	Moultus.
		Mollis,		Moolis.		
		Falsus,		Faulsus.		

Ischno-  
tes.

Ischnotes est quædam loquendi exilitas, quoties syllabas aliquas exilius & gracilius enunciamus quàm par est: ut cùm

pro	{	Nunc,	{	proferimus	{	Nync.
		Tunc,		Tync.		
		Aliquis,		Eliquis.		
		Alius,		Elius.		

Trou-

Traulismus est hæsitantia quædam aut titubantia oris, Traulismus quando eadem syllaba sæpius repetitur : ut, Cacacanit, Traulismus. pro canit : Tututullius, pro Tullius.

Huic vitio ut foedissimo, ita & periculosissimo, sic succurrendum putat Fabius: si exigatur à pueris ut nomina & versus affectatæ difficultatis, ac plurimis & asperimis inter se coeuntibus syllabis concatenatis, ac velut confragosis, quam citissime volvant : ut,

*Arx, tridens, rostris, sphinx, præster, torrida, seps, strix,*

————— postquam discordia terra

*Belli ferratos postes portasque refregit.*

Plateasmus est quando crassius & voce plusquam virili Plateasmus. loqui nitimur : ut cum

pro	{	Montes, Fontes, Pontes, Ergo, Sperma, Perago,	}	effërimus	{	Mountes. Fountes. Pointes. Argo. Sparma. Parago.
Ut etiam pro	{	Montes, Fontes, Pontes, Ergo, Sperma, Perago,	}	effërimus	{	Mountes. Fountes. Pointes. Argo. Sparma. Parago.

Sunt & alibi apud nostrates, qui pro V consonante F pro V, ponant F, & è contra V, pro F.

ut	{	Folo, Fis, Folui, Felle, Vero, Vers, Verre,	}	pro	{	Volo. Vis. Volui. Velle. Fero, Fers, Ferre,
Et rursus	{	Folo, Fis, Folui, Felle, Vero, Vers, Verre,	}	pro	{	Volo. Vis. Volui. Velle. Fero, Fers, Ferre,

S Verò mediam inter duas vocales corruptè sonant nonnulli, s.

pro	{	Læsus, Visus, Risus,	}	pronunciantes	{	Læzus. Vizus. Rizus.
-----	---	----------------------------	---	---------------	---	----------------------------

H, in initio dictionis lenius, in medio asperius, enunciarì volunt : Malè ergò, H.

pro

pro	{	Homo,	Efferimus	{	Omo.
		Hamus,			Amus.
		Humus,			Ulmus.
		Christus,			Cristus.
		Chrisma,			Crisma.
		Chremes,			Creμες.
		Thus,			Tus.
		Diphthongus,			Diptongus.
		Sphæra,			Spæra.

Fœdè quoque erratur à nostris, ubi *t* & *d* tanquam aspiratas pronunciant.

ut { Amath,  
Caputh,  
Aputh, } pro { Amat.  
Caput.  
Apud. }

At innumera penè sunt hujus generis vitia, quæ bonarum literarum candidatis, & præceptorum diligentia emendanda relinquimus.

### De sententiarum punctis.

**N**Equè exigua Orthographiæ pars in scriptura rectè distinguenda consistere videtur: Proinde de clausularum distinctionibus paucula annotasse non fuerit supervacaneum.

Puncta  
quæ.

Puncta ergò sive notæ, quibus in scribendo utuntur eruditi, Latinis dicuntur, Subdistinctio, Media distinctio, Plena ac perfecta distinctio: Græcis, Comma, Colon, Periodus.

Comma.

Subdistinctio seu Comma, est silentii nota, seu potius respirandi locus: utpote quâ pronuntiationis terminus, sensu manente, ita suspenditur, ut quod sequitur, continuò succedere debeat. Notatur autem puncto deorsum caudato, ad hunc modum (,)

Ovid. *Utendum est ætate; cito pede præterit ætas:*

*Nec bona tam sequitur, quam bona prima fuit.*

Hæc item notâ distinguuntur orationum singulæ partes: ut,

Juven.



Juven. *Grammaticus, rhetor, geometres, pictor, alypter,*  
*Graculus esuriens in cælum, jussus, ibit.*

Media distinctio, seu Colon, est ubi tantum ferè de Colon.  
 sententia restat, quantum jam dictum est : & est perfecta  
 Periodi pars, notaturque duobus punctis, sic (:) ut,  
*Quemadmodum horologii umbram progressam sentimus,*  
*progredientem non cernimus : & fruticem aut herbam cre-*  
*visse apparet, crescere autem nulli videtur : ita & ingenio-*  
*rum profectus, quoniam minutis constat auditibus, ex in-*  
*tervallo sentitur.*

Plena distinctio, quæ & Periodus dicitur, ponitur post Periodus.  
 perfectam sententiam ; quæ & puncto plano notatur,  
 hoc modo (.) ut,

*Dic mihi Musa virum, captæ post tempora Trojæ,*

*Qui mores hominum, multorum vidit, & urbes.*

Huc annumerari solent Parenthesis & Interrogatio.

Parenthesis est sententia duabus semilunulis inclusa ; Paren-  
 quâ remotâ, sermo tamen manet integer : ut, thesis.

— *Princeps ( quia bella minantur*

*Hofes ) militibus urbes præmunit, & armis.*

Interrogatio signatur duobus punctis, ac superiore Interro-  
 sursum caudato, sic (?) ut, gatio

*Et quæ tanta fuit Romam tibi causa videndi ?*

## DE ETYMOLOGIA.

**E**tymologia versatur imprimis circa investiga-  
 das dictionum origines : ut, num *Calebs* dica-  
 tur, quasi *cælestem vitam agens*, num *Lepus*,  
 quasi *levipes*.

Cæterum Etymologia ( quatenus nos hoc loco  
 de ea differimus ) est ratio cognoscendi casuum discrimi-  
 na : ut, *fortis, fortiter ; lego, legit* : omnesque oratio-  
 nis partes complectitur. Cicero Notationem, seu Veri-  
 loquium vocat. Componitur autem ab *ἔτυμ* veru s,  
 & *λόγ* sermo.



DE OCTO PARTIBUS  
ORATIONIS.

**P** Artes orationis sunt octo.
 {
 Nomen,  
 Pronomen,  
 Verbum,  
 Participium,
 }
 {
 declinabil.  
 declinabil.  
 declinabil.
 }
 {
 Adverbium,  
 Conjunctio,  
 Præpositio,  
 Interjectio,
 }
 {
 indeclinabil.  
 indeclinabil.  
 indeclinabil.
 }

## NOMEN.

Nomen.



Omen est pars orationis, quæ rem significat sine ulla temporis aut personæ differentia. Nomen dupliciter dicitur: Substantivum & Adjectivum.

Substantivum.

Substantivum est, quod nihil addi postulat ad suam significationem exprimendam.

Est autem substantivum duplex { Appellativum, & Proprium.

Appellativum.

Appellativum est, quod rem multis communem significat: ut, *Homo, lapis, justitia, bonitas.*

Proprium.

Proprium est, quod rem uni individuo proprium significat: ut, *Jesus, Maria, Londinum, Thamesis.*

Proprii nominis tria sunt genera.

Prænomen.

Prænomen, quod vel differentia causa, vel veteri ritu præponitur: ut, *Lucius, Publius, Aulus, Marcus.*

Nomen.

Nomen, quod suum est cuique: ut, *Petrus, Paulus, Cato, Tullius.*

Cognomen.

Cognomen, quod vel à cognatione impositum est; ut, *Gracchus, Fabius, Scipio, Cicero*: vel ab eventu aliquo; ut, *Africanus, Macedonicus, Germanicus.*

Adjectivum.

Adjectivum est quod Substantivo indiget, cui in oratione adhæreat: ut, *Piger, alacris, candidus, clemens.*

Adjectivum est duplex: commune & proprium.

Commune.

Commune est quod affectionem multis communem significat: ut, *Bonus, malus, solers, satur.*

Proprium.

Proprium est, quod affectionem uni individuo peculiariter significat: ut, *Gradivus Marti: Quirinus Romulo.*

# NOMEN.

9

## DE ACCIDENTIBUS NOMINI.

Nomini accidunt septem :  
Species, Figura, Numerus, Casus,  
Genus, Declinatio, Comparatio.

Nom. acc.  
cid. 7.

## DE SPECIE.

Species nominum est duplex :  
 { Primitiva,  
 &  
 Derivativa.

Species.

Primitiva est, quæ aliunde non trahitur.

Primitiva

Derivativa est, quæ aliunde formatur.

Deriva-  
tiva.

Primitivæ subjiciuntur hæc quæ sequuntur, & hujus-  
modi.

Collectivum scilicet, quod singulari numero multitu- Collecti-  
dinem significat : ut, *Concio, cætus, plebs, turba, pecus,* vum,  
*grex.*

Fictitium, quod à sono fingitur : ut, *Sibilus, timinna-* Fictitium,  
*bulum, stridor, clangor.*

Interrogativum : ut, *Quis, uter, qualis, quantus, quot,* Interro-  
*numquid :* Quæ aliquando migrant in indefinita, ali- ganvum,  
quando in relativa.

Redditivum, quod interrogativo respondet : ut, *Talis,* Redditi-  
*tantus, tot.* vum.

Numerale, cujus species hæc numerantur.

Nume-  
rale.

Cardinale, à quo, ceu à fonte, alii numeri dimanant :  
ut, *Unus, duo, tres, quatuor.*

Cardinale

Ordinale : ut, *Primus, secundus, tertius, quartus.*

Ordinale.

Distributivum : ut, *Singuli, bini, terni, quaterni.*

Distribu-

Partitivum, quod significat vel multa singulatim ; ut,

civum,

*Quisque, unusquisque, uterque, neuter :* vel unum

Partiti-

*è multis :* ut, *Alter, aliquis, cætera, reliquus.*

vum.

Universale : ut, *Omnis, cunctus, nullus, nemo.*

Univer-

Particulare : ut, *Aliquis, quisquam, nullus, quidam.*

sale.

Deriva-  
tiva.  
Verbale.  
Patrium.

Derivativa autem has species subjectas habet; nimirum

Verbale: ut, *Lectio, litura, auditus, aratrum.*

Patrium: ut, *Eboracensis, Londinensis, Oxonienfis, Etonensis.*

Gentile.  
Patronymicum.

Gentile: ut, *Græcus, Latinus, Hebræus, Anglus.*

Patronymicum, quod vel à patre, vel ab alia quâpiam suæ familiæ persona derivatur.

ut, *Æacides*, filius vel nepos *Æaci*.  
*Nerine*, filia vel neptis *Nerei*.  
*Latoïdes*, filius *Latona*.  
*Menelais*, uxor *Menelai*.

Diminuti-  
vum.  
Possessivum.  
Materiale.  
Locale.  
Adverbiale.  
Participiale.

Diminutivum: ut, *Regulus, popellus, majusculus, minusculus.*

Possessivum: ut, *Herilis, servilis, regius, paternus.*

Materiale: ut, *Faginus, lapideus, gemmeus, aureus,*

Locale: ut, *Hortensis, agrestis, marinus, montanus.*

Adverbiale: ut, *Hodiernus, hesternus, crastinus, clandestinus.*

Participiale: ut, *Amandus, docendus, videndus, scribendus.*

Et quæ in *lis* exeunt à verbis deducta: ut, *Fistilis, costilis, flexilis, pensilis.*

#### DE FIGURA.

Figura  
nominum.

Figura aut est simplex, ut *Fustus*: aut composita, ut *Injustus*. Sunt qui huc addunt & decompositum; ut, *Irreparabilis*.

#### DE NUMERO.

Numerus.

Numeri sunt duo: Singularis de uno; ut, *Pater*; Pluralis de pluribus; ut, *Patres*.

#### DE CASU.

Casus nominum sunt sex.

Nominativus.  
Genitivus.  
Dativus.  
Octavus casus.

Nominativus, qui & rectus dicitur, est prima vox quâ rem aliquam nominamus.

Genitivus, qui significat cujus sit res quæpiam; atque hic patrius, gignendi, aut interrogandi casus dici solet.

Dativus, sive dandi casus dicitur, quo quid cuiquam attribuimus. Sub hac voce octavum etiam casum comprehendunt.

# N O M E N.

II

prehenderunt : ut, *It clamor cælo*, id est, *in cælum*.

Accusativus, qui & inculativus, vel causativus dici potest, qui verbum sequitur ; utpote in quem actio verbi immediatè transit : ut, *Amo patrem*.

Vocativus, quem & salutatorium vocant, vocandis compellendisve personis accommodatur.

Ablativus, quo quippiam ab aliquo auferri significamus. Hic sextus atque Latinus casus appellatur, nempe quòd Latinorum sit proprius.

Accusativus.

Vocativus.

Ablativus, Latinus casus.

## D E G E N E R E.

Genus est sexûs discretio. Et sunt genera numero septem : Masculinum, cujus nota est *Hic* : foemininum, *Hæc* : neutrum, *Hoc* : commune, *Hic & hæc* : commune trium, *Hic, hæc & hoc* : dubium, *Hic* vel *hæc* : epicœnum seu promiscuum, quum sub una generis nota utrumque sexum complectimur : ut *Hic anser*, *hæc aquila*. Quamquam hoc quidem genus ad præsens negotium non ita propriè spectare videtur ; cum hoc quidem loco non de natura rerum agatur, sed de qualitate vocum.

Porro, inter commune genus & dubium hæc est differentia : quòd ubi semel communis generis nomini adjectivum copulaveris, non jam integrum fuerit de eadem re loquenti, mutare genus adjectivi : ut, si dixeris *Durus parens*, aut *Canis sæta* ; quamdiu de eisdem ipsis individuis loqueris, non licebit mutato genere dicere, *parentem iniquam*, aut *Canem sætum*. At verò, dubii generis substantivo posito, etiamsi adjectivum masculinum addideris, nihilo tamen secius de eadem re sermonem continuanti, licuerit pro tuo arbitratu mutare genus adjectivi : ut si dixeris, *Durum corticem*, poteris etiam de eodem loqui, pergens dicere, *eandem corticem esse & amaram*.

Communis & dubii differentia.

Ut autem genera nominum ad amussim calleas, hi sequentes canones tibi summâ diligentia imbibendi sunt, quos & *Guiliel. Lili* Anglo acceptos referre debes.

Mascula  
sunt no-  
mina Di-

vorum,  
Viorum,

Fluvio-  
rum,

Mensum  
Vento-

rum.  
Fœmini-

na Dea-  
rum,

Mulic-  
rum, Ur-

bium,  
Regio-

num.  
Insula-

rum. Ex-  
ceptio.

Etiā  
\* Hippo.

Etiā  
\* Reate,

Cere,  
Appel.

Arborum  
fœmin.

\* Rectius  
qui le-

gant  
mas pi-

mas, viz.  
Pinaſter.

Nomina  
Volu-

crum,  
Ferarum,

Piſcium.  
Exceptio

Generalis  
viz. de

appella-  
tione,



## GUILIELMI LILII

### Regulæ generales propriorum.

**P**ropriæ quæ maribus tribuuntur, mascula dicas :  
Ut sunt divorum ; Mars, Bacchus, Apollo : virorum ;  
Ut Cato, Virgilius : fluviorum ; ut, Tybris, Orontes :  
Mensum ; ut, October : ventorum ; ut, Libis, Notus, Auster.

### De Fœmininis.

**P**ropriæ fœmineum referentia nomina sexum,  
Fœmineo generi tribuuntur : sive dearum  
Sunt ; ut, Fano, Venus : mulierum ; ceu, Anna, Philotis :  
Urbium ; ut, Elis, Opus : regionum ; ut, Græcia, Persis :  
Insula item nomen ; ceu, Creta, Britannia, Cyprus.  
Excipienda tamen quædam sunt urbium ; ut ista  
Mascula, \* Sulmo, Agragas : quædam neutralia, ut \* Argos,  
Tibur, Præneste : & genus Anxur quod dat utrumque.

### Regulæ generales Appellativorum.

**A**ppellativa arborum erunt muliebriâ ; ut, alnus,  
Cupressus, cedrus. Mas \* spinus, mas oleaster.  
Et sunt neutra, filer, suber, thus, robur, acérque.

### Epicœna.

**S**unt etiam Volucrum ; ceu, passer, hirundo : ferarum ;  
Ut, Tigris, Vulpes : & piſcium ; ut, ostrea, cetus,  
Dicta epicœna : quibus vox ipsa genus feret aptum.  
Attamen ex \* cunctis quæ diximus antè notandum,  
Omne quod exit in um, seu Græcum sive Latinum,  
Esse genus neutrum ; sic invariabile nomen.

Sed nunc de reliquis, quæ Appellativa vocantur,  
Aut quæ sunt tanquam Appellativa, ordine dicam :

*Nam genus his semper dignoscitur ex genitivo,  
Infra ut monstrabit specialis regula triplex.*

Tres re-  
gulae  
specialis.

## Prima regula specialis.

**N**omen non crescens genitivo, ceu, caro carnis,  
Capra caprae, nubes nubis, genus est muliebre.

Regula  
specialis  
prima.

Quoniam Lilius noster genus nominum appellativo-  
rum ex genitivo dignoscendum docet, admonendi hoc  
loco sunt pueri, hanc primam regulam esse omnium no-  
minum appellativorum non crescentium in genitivo;  
cujus generis sunt omnia primae & quartae inflexionis;  
& secundae etiam, praeter paucula quaedam, quae infra  
in tertia regula excepta reperies.

Pertinent etiam ad hanc classem pleraque tertiae decli-  
nationis: cujusmodi sunt, Labes labis; pestes pestis;  
vis, genitivo vis; mater matris; caro, carnis.

## Masculina excepta ex non crescentibus.

**M**ascula nomina in a dicuntur multa virorum:  
ut scriba, assecla, scurra, & rabula, lixa, lanista.

Mascula, Graecorum quot declinatio prima

Fundit in as & in es; & ab illis quot per a sunt:

Ut, satrapas, satrapa; \* athletes, athleta. Leguntur

Mascula item, verres, natalis, aqualis: ab asse

Nata, ut centussis: conjunge lienis, & orbis;

Callis, caulis, follis, collis, mensis, & ensis,

Fustis, funis, panis, penis, crinis, & ignis,

Cassis, fascis, torris, sentis, piscis, & unguis,

Et vermis, vectis, postis, societur & axis.

Mascula in er, ceu venter: in os vel us, ut logos, annua.

1. Nomina viro-  
rum in a.

2. In as,  
es, & a,  
primae  
declinat.  
Graeco-  
rum.

\* Sic Po-  
eta. Co-  
meta. Bi-  
bliopola.

3. Verres  
&c.

In er, os,  
& us.

Fœmin.  
excepta  
in er, os,  
& us

## Fœminina non crescentia.

**F**œminei generis sunt mater, humus, domus, alvus,  
Et colus, & quarta pro fructu ficu, acusque,

Viz. nar-  
dus, Me-  
thodus,  
Dialecti-  
us, &c.

Porticus, atque tribus, socrus, nurus & manus, idus :  
Huc anus addenda est, huc mystica vannus Iacchi :  
His jungas os in us vertentia Græca ; papyrus,  
Antidotus, costus, diphthongus, byssus, abyssus,  
Crystallus, synodus, sapphirus, eremus & Arctus,  
Cum multis aliis, quæ nunc perscribere longum est.

### Neutra non crescentia.

**N**eutrum nomen in e, si gignit is, ut mare, rete :  
Et quot in on vel in um fiunt ; ut barbiton, ovum.  
Est neutrum hippomanes genus, & neutrum cacoëthes,  
Et virus, pelagus : neutrum modò, mas modò, vulgus.

### Dubia non crescentia.

**I**ncerti generis sunt talpa, & dama, canalis,  
Halcyonis, finis, clunis, testis, penus, amnis,  
Pampinus, & corbis, linter, torquis, specus, anguis,  
Pro morbo ficus fici dans, atque phaselus,  
Lecythus, ac atomus, grossus, pharus, & paradisus.

### Communia non crescentia.

Excipe  
Puerpo-  
ra.

**C**ompositum à verbo dans a commune duorum est :  
Grajugena à gigno, agricola à colo, id advena mon-  
A venio : adde senex, auriga, & verna, sodalis, (strat  
Vates, extorris, patruelis, perque duellis,  
Affinis, juvenis, testis, civis, canis, hostis.

### Secunda regula specialis.

Regula  
specialis  
secunda.

**N**omen, crescentis penultima si genitivi  
Syllaba acuta sonat, velut hac pietas pietatis,  
Virtus virtutis monstrant, genus est muliebre.

Huc spectant quæ acuunt penultimam genitivi cres-  
centis ; qualia sunt omnia quintæ inflectionis, præter  
Vides.

Omnia item monosyllaba, præter Vis, reliqua om-  
nia sunt tertiæ declinationis : ut sunt omnia desinentia,  
In



# NOMEN.

15

In	C	}	ut	Halec, halêcis.	
	In	}		Delphin,	înis.
	An	}		Titan,	ânis.
	Ans	}	ut	Infans,	
	Ens	}		Quadrans	antis.
	Uns	}	ut	Continens	entis.
				Triens,	
				Decuns, decuncis.	

In *er* longum, quæ Græcis per *np* scribuntur : ut, Character, crater, stater, soter, êris.

Latina in *er* ad tertiam regulam pertinent : quare mulier haud recte in hac classe collocatur.

In	Inx	}	ut	Syrinx, ingis.	
	Anx	}		Phalanx, angis.	
	Unx	}	ut	Deunx,	
	Ons	}		Septunx,	uncis.
	Ors	}	ut	Effrons,	
	Ors	}		Bifrons,	ontis.
				Cohors,	
				Confors,	ortis.

Præterea in *o* Latina, quæ *ônis* & *ênis* habent in genitivo : ut, Lectio, ligo, spado, ônis ; Anio, ênis.

Præter paucula gentilia, quæ ad tertiam regulam pertinent : ut, Macedo, Brito, Saxo, Vangio, Lingo, ônis.

In *al* neutra : ut, Vectigal, animal, âlis : Cætera in *al* sunt tertiæ regulæ.

In *en*, quæ *ênis* habent in genitivo : ut, Lien, Sirep, ênis. Cætera sunt tertiæ regulæ.

In *oy* Græca, quæ retinent *oy* in genitivo : ut, Damon, Ladon, Simon, Trion, ônis.

Quædam variant : ut, Orion, Edon, Egeon, ônis & ônis : Cætera sunt tertiæ regulæ.

In *ar* Latina : ut, Laquear, exemplar, calcar, âris : præter Jubar, nectar, âris ; hepar, hepâtis.

In *or* Latina : ut, Amor, timor, uxor, ôris.

Præter sequentia, quæ ad tertiam regulam spectant :  
ut,

ut Arbor, marmor, æquor, ador, robor, &c. ōris. Et Græca quoque nonnulla : ut, Rhetor, Hæctor, Nestor, Stentor, &c. ōris.

In *as* Latina : ut, Majestas, lenitas, humilitas, humanitas, &c. ātis. Excipe, Anas, anātis ; & Græca quædam ut, Lampas, monas, trias, decas, ādis.

In *es* Latina aliquot : ut, Quies, magnes, locuples, ētis ; Merces, hæres, cohæres, ēdis.

Accedunt his etiam Græca quædam : ut, Lebes, tapes, Dares, Chremes, ētis.

\* Pyrois,  
entis.

In *is*, quæ faciunt ītis, īnis, & īdis \* in genitivo : ut, Samnis, Quiris, ītis : Salamis, Trachis, īnis : Rſophis, Crenis, īdis : Cætera sunt tertiæ regulæ.

In *os* Latina : ut, Custos, ōdis : Nepos, ōtis. Præter Compos, impos, ōtis.

Et Græca quæ retinent *o* in penultima genitivi : ut, Heros, Minos, ōis. Rhinoceros, ægoceros, ōtis.

\* Pro ci-  
vitate  
Locr.

In *us* quæ mittunt genitivum singularem in ūtis, ūdis, ūris, ūntis : ut, Salus, palus, tellus, \* Opus. Præter unam vocem, Pecus pecūdis.

Huc pertinent & comparativa neutra in *us* : ut, Sanctius, probius, melius, pejus, ōris.

In *ax*, tam Latina quam Græca : ut, Limax, fornax, thorax, Phæax, audax, bibax, ācis.

Excipe, Græca quædam appellativa & gentilia : ut, Abax, ſtorax, ſtyrax, ſimilax, colax, corax, dropax, Pharnax, Candax, ācis : Syphax tamen variat ācis, & ācis.

In *ex* paucula quædam : ut, Vervex, ēcis ; Vibex, īcis ; Exlex, ēgis ; Alex, alēcis.

Reliqua in *ex* ad tertiam regulam referenda sunt.

In *ix* Latina & Græca : ut Lodix, radix, cornix, spadix ; foelix, phoenix, perdix, coturnix, &c. īcis. Et verba omnia in *trix* : ut, Victrix, nutritrix, motrix, lotrix, &c. īcis. Cætera pertinent ad tertiam regulam.

In *ox* substantiva & adjectiva : ut, Celox, velox, ōcis. Præter Cappadox, ōcis ; Allobrox, ōgis ; & quædam alia.

In *ux* ; ut, Pollux, Pollūcis. Cætera sunt tertiæ regulæ.  
In *yx* : ut, Bombyx, bombycis : Bebryx autem variat  
Bebrycis. Cætera ad tertiam regulam relegari debent.

In *s* Græca, præcedente *p* : ut, Hydrops, Cyclops,  
conops, Cercops, ôpis. Reliqua in *ops* ad tertiam regu-  
lam referenda sunt.

## Masculinâ excepta ex acutè crescentibus.

**M**ascula dicuntur monosyllaba nomina quadam,  
Sal, sol, ren, & splen, Car, Ser, vir, vas vadis, as, mas,  
Bes, Cres, pres, & pes, glis gliris, habens genitivo :  
Mos, flos, ros, & Tros, mus, dens, mons, pons, simul & fons,  
Seps pro serpente, grips, Thrax, rex, grex gregis, & Phryx,  
Mascula sunt etiam polysyllaba in *n* ; ut, Acarnan,  
Lichen & delphin : & in *o* signantia corpus ;  
Ut leo, curculio ; sic senio, ternio, sermo.

Mono-  
syllaba  
quædam.

Polysyl-  
laba in *n*  
& *o*.

Mascula in *er*, *or*, & *os* ; ceu, crater, conditor, heros :  
Sic torrens, nefrens, oriens, cum pluribus in dens :

In *er*, *or*,  
& *os*.

Quale bidens, quando pro instrumento reperitur :  
Adde gigas, elephas, adamas, Garamâsque, tapésque.  
Atque lebes, Cures, magnes, unumque, meridi-  
es nomen quintæ : & quæ componuntur ab asse ;  
Ut dodrans, semis, jungantur mascula Samnis,  
Hydrops, nycticorax, thorax, & mascula vervex,  
Phoenix & bombyx pro vermiculo. Attamen ex his  
Sunt muliebres genus, Syren, mulier, soror, uxor.

## Neutra excepta ex acutè crescentibus.

**S**unt neutralia & hæc monosyllaba nomina, mel, fel,  
Lac, far, ver, cor, as, vas vasis, os ossis, & oris,  
Rus, thus, jus, crus, pus. Et in *al* polysyllaba in *arque*  
Ut, Capital, laquear. Neutrum halec & muliebres.

Neut.  
mel, fel,  
lac, &c.  
& in *al*,  
*ar*, poly-  
syllaba.  
Halec.

## Dubia acutè crescentia.

**S**unt dubia hæc Python, scrobs, serpens, bubo, rudens, grus,  
Perdix, lynx, lymax, stirps pro trunco, pedis & calx :  
Adde dies numero tantum mas esto secundo.

Com-

Communia acutè crescentia.

*Sunt commune, Parens, autórque, infans, adolescens,  
Dux, illex, hæres, exlex ; à fronte creata,*

\*Sic La- *Ut bifrons : custos, bos, \* fur, sus, atque sacerdos.*  
tro.

### Tertia & ultima regula specialis.

Tertia  
regula  
specialis.

**N**omen, crescentis penultima si genitivi  
*Sit gravis, ut sanguis genitivo sanguinis, est mas.*

Huc spectant penultimam genitivi crescentis gravantia, cujus generis sunt paucula illa secundæ declinationis de quibus suprà meminimus ; videlicet, Socer, gener, puer, eri ; adulter, eri ; Presbyter, eri.

Composita à vir viri : ut, Levir, Triumvir, Decemvir, Centumvir, iri.

Composita item à gero & fero : ut, Armiger, claviger, caducifer, lucifer, eri : & adjectiva quædam : ut, Tener, dexter, prosper, eri ; Satur, uri. Spectant huc & Græca omnia neutrius generis in a : ut, Poëma, dogma, sophisma, ænigma, ätis.

In yr item Græca : ut, Martyr, Martyris ; Psithyr, psithyris.

Omnia item in ur Latina : ut, Augur, murmur, furfur, cicur, üris.

In ut etiam omnia : ut, Caput, capitis ; Occiput, occipitis.

Præterea in o Latina omnia, præter illa quæ superiùs excipiuntur : ut, Imago, fartago, ordo, cardo, inis.

In l : ut, Annibal, älis ; mugil, ilis : Consul, Præsul, ülis.

In en : ut, Pecten, tibicen, carmen, crimen, inis.

In on Græca, quæ sumunt o parvum in penultima genitivi singularis : ut, Canon, dæmon, architecton, Philemon, önis.

In or Latina & Græca : ut, Arbor, æquor, marmor, pantocrator, apator, öris.

In as : ut, Anas, anätis.

Et

# NOMEN.

19

Et Græca : ut, Archas, chalias, hebdomas, enneas, ādis.  
In *es* Latina : ut, Fomes, limes, ītis ; præses, deses, īdis.  
In *is* Latina & Græca : ut, Sanguis, pollis, īnis ; Ty-  
rannis, paropsis, īdis.

In *ar* Latina & Græca : ut, Jubar, compar, nectar,  
bacchar, āris.

In *er* Græca : ut, Aër, æther, ēris.

In *s* præcedente consonante, tam Latina, quam

\* Græca : ut,

{ Princeps,	{ cīpis ;	{ Æthiops,	{ ōpis ;
{ Hyems,	{ ĕmis ;	{ Arabs,	{ ābis ;
{ Inops,	{ ōpis ;	{ Chalybs,	{ ybis.

\* Excipe  
quædam  
in ps.

In *os* Latina : ut, Compos, ōtis.

In *us* Latina & Græca ; ut, Pecus, decus, ōris ; vellus,  
vulnus, ēris ; Tripus, Oedipus, ōdis.

In *ax* Græca : ut, Abax, storax, colax, climax, ācis.

In *ex* Græca : ut, Index, vindex, carnifex, aruspex, īcis.

In *ix* Latina & Græca : ut, Varix, fornix, calix, īcis ;  
Mastix, īgis.

In *ox* Latina & Græca : ut, Præcox, Cappadox, ōcis ;  
Allobrox, Polyphlox, ōgis.

In *ux* Latina : ut, Conjux, conjūgis ; Redux, reducis.

Denique in *yx* Græca : ut, Onyx, Sardonyx, Ceryx,  
Eryx, ychis.

**Femin. excepta ex graviter crescentibus.**

**F**eminei generis sit hyperdissyllabon in do,  
Quod dinis ; atque in go, quod dat ginis in genitivo.

Id tibi dulcedo faciens dulcedinis, idque  
Monstrat compago compaginis : adjice virgo,  
Grando, fides, compes, teges, & seges, arbor, hyemsque :  
Sic Baccar, sindon, Gorgon, icon & Amazon.

Gracula in as vel in is finita : ut, Lampas, Iaspis,  
Cassis, cuspis ; in us vox una pecus pecudis dans,  
His forfex, pellex, carex, simul atque supellex,  
Appendix, histrix, coxendix, adde filixque.

Hyper-  
dissylla-  
bon in  
do & go.

Gracula  
in as & is.

Neutra

## Neutra excepta ex graviter crescentibus.

Inani-  
mat. in a,  
en, ar, ur,  
us, put,  
excipe.

**E** St neutrale genus signans rem non animatam,  
Nomen in a; ut problema: en; ut omen: ar; ut ju-  
(bar: ur dans;

Ut jecur: us; ut onus: put; ut occiput. Attamen ex his  
Mascula sunt, pecten, fursur: sunt neutra, cadaver:  
Verber, iter, suber, pro fungo tuber, & uber,  
Gingiber, & laser, cicer, & piper, atque papaver,  
Et fiser, atque filer. Neutra æquor, marmor, adorque  
Atque pecus, quando pecoris facit in genitivo.

## Dubia ex graviter crescentibus.

**S**unt dubii generis, cardo, margo, cinis, obex,  
Pulvis, adeps, forceps, pumex, ramex, anas, imbrex:  
Adde culex, natrix, & onyx cum prole, filéxque:  
Quamvis hæc melius vult mascula dicier usus.

## Communia ex graviter crescentibus.

**C**ommunis generis sunt ista, vigil, pugil, exul,  
Præsul, homo, nemo, martyr, Lygur, augur, & Arcas,  
Antistes, miles, pedes, interpres, comes, hospes;  
Sic ales, præses, princeps, auceps, eques, obfes:  
Atque \* alia à verbis quæ nomina multa creantur;  
Ut Conjux, judex, vindex, opifex, & aruspex.

\* Sic Ar-  
tifex, mu-  
niceps,  
particeps.

## Regula Adjectivorum generalis.

**A**djectiva unam duntaxat habentia vocem,  
Ut sælix, audax, retinent genus omne sub una:  
Sub gemina si voce cadant, velut omnis & omne,  
Vox commune dūm prior est, vox altera neutrum:  
At si tres variant voces, sacer ut s<sup>cr</sup> & sacrum:  
Vox prima est mas, altera fœmina, tertia neutrum.  
At sunt quæ flexu propè substantiva vocares,  
Adjectiva tamen naturâ usūque reperta:  
Talia sunt pauper, puber, cum degener, uber,  
Et dives, locuples, sospes, comes atque superstes;  
Cum paucis alijs, quæ lectio iusta docebit.

*Hæc proprium quendam sibi flexum asciscere gaudent,  
Campester, volucer, celebrer, celer, atque saluber:  
Funge pedester, equester, & acer: junge paluster,  
Ac alacer, sylvester. At hæc tu sic variabis;  
Hic celer, hæc celeris, neutro hoc celere: Aut aliter sic;  
Hic atque hæc celeris, rursus hoc celere est tibi neutrum.  
Sunt quæ deficiunt genere adjectiva notanda,  
De quibus atque aliis alibi tibi mentio fiet.*

## DE DECLINATIONE.

**D** Declinatio est variatio dictionis per casus. Sunt autem declinationes numero quinque. Declina-  
tiones no-  
minum.  
**P**rima declinatio complectitur quatuor termina-  
tiones: Prima  
nominum  
declinatio

*A,* { ut, { *Menſa* ; { { *Es,* { ut, { *Anchiſes* ;  
*As,* { { *Æneas* ; { { *E,* { { *Penelope.*

Porrò Græca ſunt { *As,* { *Thomas.*  
omnia quæ in { *Es,* { finiuntur: ut, { *Anchiſes.*  
{ *E,* { { *Phoebe.*

Sunt qui huc addunt Hebræa quædam in *am*: ut, *A-*  
*dam*, *Adæ*. *Abraham*, *Abrahæ*. Quæ tamen melius ad  
Latinorum formam redacta, ad hunc modum inflexeris:  
*Adamus*, *Adami*; *Abrahamus*, *Abrahami*.

*As*, accuſativum in *am* & in *an* facit, ut, *Æneas*, *Æne-* *As.*  
*am*, vel *Ænean*; vocativum in *a*; ut, *Æneas*, *Ænea*.

*Es*, in accuſativo *en* ſumit; ut, *Anchiſes*, *Anchiſen*: in *Es*,  
vocativo & ablativo *e* vel *a*; ut, *Anchiſe*, vel *Anchiſa*.

*E*, genitivum in *es* mittit, dativum in *e*, accuſativum *E*.  
in *en*, vocativum & ablativum in *e*; ut,

Nom.	{ <i>Penelope,</i>	{ Acc.	{ <i>Penelopen,</i>
Gen.	{ <i>Penelopes,</i>	{ Voc.	{ <i>Penelope,</i>
Dat.	{ <i>Penelope,</i>	{ Abl.	{ <i>Penelope.</i>

*As*, in genitivo nominum Latinorum interdum repe- As in  
Genit.  
ritur ad Græcorum imitationem: ut, *Pater-familiās*,  
*Filius-familiās*. Id quod veteres obſervabant in multis  
aliis. *Ennius*; *Dux ipſe viās*.



Livius Andronicus; *Mercurius*, cūque eo, *filius Latonās*, pro *Latona*. Sic. *Nævius*; *Filii terrās*, pro *terra*. Virgilius; *Nec aurās*, *nec sonitus memor*.

Aulai, & Pictai, atque id genus alia, priscis relinquitur. Genitivus pluralis interdum Syncopen admittit: ut, *Æneadūm*, *Grajugenūm*; pro *Æneadarum*, *Grajugenarum*.

Hæc dativos & ablativos plurales mittunt in *abus*; Dea, mula, equa, liberta, ambæ, duæ, *abus*.

Hæc vero tam in *is*, quàm in *abus*; Filia, filiis vel filiabus; Nata, natis vel natabus.

## SECUNDA DECLINATIO.

Secunda  
declina-  
tio.

Secundæ declinationis terminationes sunt apud Latinos quinque; 

Er,	}	ut,	Aper.
Ir,			Vir.
Ur,			Satur.
Us,			Dominus.
um,			Templum.

Et Græcorum, 

Os,	}	ut,	Delos.
On,			Ilion.
Eus,			Orpheus.

Attica in *os* genitivum in *o* mittunt, accusativum in *on*: ut, *Androgeos*, *Androgeô*. Accus. *Androgeôn*.

Quædam Græca contracta in *us*, vocativum formant in *û*: ut, *Panthus*, *ô Panthû*: *Oedipus*, *ô Oedipû*.

Notabis & Latina quædam, tam in *us* quàm in *e* mittere vocativum singularem: ut, *Agnus*, *vulgus*, *lucus*, *fluvius*, *chorus*, *populus pro natione*.

*Eus*, genitivum format in *ei* vel *eos*, dativum in *ei*, accusativum in *ea*, vocativum in *eu*: ut,

(pheon.)

Nom.	{ Orpheus. (pheos.)	Acc.	{ Orphea. <i>Ovid.</i> Or-
Gen.	{ Orphei vel Or-	Voc.	{ Orpheu.
Dat.	{ Orphei	Abl.	{ Orptheo.

Notandæ sunt deniq; 

Deūm,	}	pro	Deorum.
Virūm,			Virorum.

Item

Item anomala illa Ambo & Duo ; quas duas voces Poëtæ etiam in accusativo Masculinas usurpant : ut, Virg. *Si duo præterea tales Idæa tulisset Terra viros.* Hor. *Nè vos titillet gloria, iurejurando obstringam ambo.* Cic. in Phi, secund. *Præter duo vos, nemo sic loquitur.*

## TERTIA DECLINATIO.

**T**ertia declinatio admodum varia est: cujus difficili-  
liores duntaxat casus hoc loco attingemus.

Quorundam accusativi flectuntur tantum in *im* ; ut, *Accusat.*  
Vim, ravim, tussim, sitim, magударim, amussim, *singula-*  
Charybdim. *ris.*

Sic & quorundam fluviorum accusativi : ut, Ty-  
brim, Ararim.

Quædam accusativos flectunt in *im* & in *em* commu-  
niter : ut, Buris, pelvis, clavis, securis, puppis, torquis,  
turris, restis, febris, navis, bipennis, aqualis, *im* vel *em*.

Ablativus regulariter in *e* definit : ut Pectus, salus ; *Ablati-*  
Ablativo Pectore, salute. *vus.*

Propria nomina adjectivis similia, ablativos in *e* mit-  
tunt : ut Felice, Clemente, Juvenale, Martiale, &c.

At neutra desinentia in *al*, *er*, & *e* ablativum magna  
ex parte mittunt in *i* :

ut,	{	Veſtigal, Calcar, Mare.	}	Ablat.	{	Veſtigali, Calcari. Mari.	}
-----	---	-------------------------------	---	--------	---	---------------------------------	---

Ablativus rete à nominativo retis est : non à nomina-*Retis.*  
tivo rete. Par, cum compositis, tam *e* quàm *i* habet :  
ut, Par, compar : ablativo pare, Compare, vel ri.

Hæc tamen *e* retinent, Far, hepar, jubar, nectar, gau-  
ſape, præsepe.

Et hæc propria	{	Soraſte, Præneſte, Reate.	}	Ablat.	{	Soraſte. Præneſte. Reate.	}
----------------	---	---------------------------------	---	--------	---	---------------------------------	---

Festorum nomina, quæ tantum pluralia sunt, geniti-*Festorum*  
vum interdum in *orum* mittunt, ut Agonalia, Vinalia ; *nomina.*  
Genitivo Agonaliorum, Vinaliorum.

Interdum autem in *ium* : ut, Floralia, Feralia ; genitivo, Floralium, Feralium.

Aliquando verò tam in *orum* quàm in *ium* : ut, Parentalia, Saturnalia : genitivo Parentaliorum, Saturnaliorum, vel *ium*.

Dativus verò & ablativus in *bus* : ut, Saturnalibus, Bacchanalibus : præter Quinquatriis, quod juxta secundam declinationem format prædictos casus.

Mensium  
nomina.

Mensium nomina in *er* vel *is* ablativum in *i* solum mittunt : ut, September, Aprilis : Ablativo Septembri, Aprili.

Quorum accusativus in *im* tantum definit, iis ablativus exit in *i*, ut, Sitim, tussim : ablativo Siti, tussi.

Adjectiva, quæ nominativum in *is* vel *er* & *e* neutrum faciunt, ablativum mittunt in *i* solum : ut, Fortis, mollis, dulcis ; ablativo Forti, molli, dulci.

Sic Acer, acris, acre ; ablativo acri.

Nota.

Licet Poetæ, interdum metri causa, *e* pro *i* usurpent.

Cætera adjectiva tam in *e* quàm in *i* mittunt : ut, Capax, duplex ; ablativo capace, duplici, vel ci.

Præter pauper, degener, uber, sospes, hospes, quæ in *e* tantum faciunt ablativum.

Comparativa etiam bifariam faciunt ablativum : ut, Melior, doctior ; ablativo Meliore, doctiore, vel ri. Similiter & substantiva quædam : ut, Ignis, amnis, anguis, supellex, unguis, vectis ; ablativo *e* vel *i*.

Rariùs autem Civis, { Ablat- } Cive, vel civi.

Rariùs etiam Arpinas, { tivo. } Arpinate, vel ti.

Et sic de cæteris id genus gentilibus. Denique ad eundem modum ablativos formant, quorum accusativi per *em* & *im* finiunt : ut, puppis, navis ; ablativo puppe, nave, vel i. Et Verbalia item in *trix* : ut, Victrix, altrix, ablativo Victrice, altrice, vel ci.

Neutra, quorum ablativus singularis exit in *i* tantum, vel in *e* & *i*, nominativum pluralem mittunt in *ia* ; ut, Molli, duplici, vel ci ; nominativo plurali, Mollia,

Mollia, duplicia. Præter Ubera, plura, vel pluria, aplustra vel aplustria: sic comparativa; ut, Meliora, fortiora, doctiora, priora.

Ex ablativis in *i* tantum, vel in *e* & *i*, fit pluraliter Genitivus in *ium*: ut, utili, utilium, puppe, vel *pi*, pup-  
pium, præter { Majorum, } Item præter ista, Sup-  
comparativa: ut { Meliorum, } plicium, complicum, strigilum, artificum, vigilum, ve-  
terum, memorum, pugilum, inopum; at plus plurium  
format.

Sunt & quæ Syncopen aliquando admittunt: cujusmodi sunt Sapientum pro sapientium, serpentum pro serpentium.

Quando nominativi singulares duabus consonantibus finiuntur, genitivi plurales exeunt in *ium*: ut, Pars, urbs, falx, glans, trabs, merx; genitivo plurali, Partium, urbium, falcium, glandium, trabium, mercium.

Excipe Hyemum, principum, participum, municipum, forcipum, inopum, coelibum, clientum, &c.

Ubi in nominativis & genitivis singularibus reperiuntur pares syllabæ, genitivus pluralis exit in *ium*.

ut, { Collis, } in genitivo { Collium, } Adde istis,  
{ Mensis, } { Mensium, }  
{ Auris, } { Aurium, }

Litium, ditium, virium, salium, manium, penatium.

Excipe tamen Canum, panum, vatum, juvenum, opum, apum, &c.

As format assium: Mas Marium: Vas, vadis, vadium:

Nox noctium: Nix nivium: Os ossium: Faux faucium:

Mus murium: Caro carniū: Cor cordium: Alicum

ab ales, assumit u.

Boum anomalum est, ut etiam hobus vel bubus.

Quorum genitivi plurales desinunt in *ium*, accusativum formant per *es* & *eis* diphthongum: ut, Partium, omnium; Partes, omnes vel eis.

Græcæ fonte derivata pleraque, quando juxta linguæ suæ

*suæ* morem variantur, genitivum mittunt in *os* : ut, Tltan, Pan, Daphnis, Phyllis : genitivo Titânos, Panos, Daphnidos, Phyllidos : dativum verò in *i* breve : ut, Tltani, Pani, Daphnidi, Phyllidi : accusativum in *a*, ( nisi sint neutrius generis in *a* non terminata : ) ut Panna, Phyllida, Amaryllida, Orphea.

*Is* tamen & *ys* per *os* purum declinata in genitivo, accusativum faciunt, *s* nominativi mutatâ in *n* : ut,

Tethys, Tethyos,	} Accusat.	Tethyn.
Decapolis, lios,		Decapolin.
Genesis, fios,		Genesin.
Metamorphôsis, fios.		Metamorphôsin.

Sunt quæ duplicem genitivum faciunt : alterum in *os* non purum, alterum in *os* purum. Atque hæc pro genitivorum ratione duplicem quoque accusativum formant ; alterum in *n*, alterum in *a* : ut Paris, genitivo Paridos & Parios, accusativo Parida & Parin : Themis, genitivo Themidos & Themios, accusativo Themida & Themin.

Fœminina in *û*, genitivum in *ûs*, & accusativum in *ô* mittunt :

ut	} hanc	Sapphô.
Sapphô, Sapphûs,		Mantô.
Mantô, Mantûs,		Cliô.
Cliô, Cliûs,		

Vocativus.

Vocativus nominativo magna ex parte similis est ; in nonnullis tamen à nominativo abjicitur *s* : ut, Pallas, Pallantis ; Theseus, Theseos ; Tethys, Tethyos ; vocativo ô Palla, Theseu, Tethy.

Phyllis, Phyllidos,	} Vocativo ô	Phylli.
Alexis, Alexios,		Alexi.
Achilles, Achilleos,		Achille.

Græca  
neutra  
in A.

Neutra singularia in *a* Græca sunt : ut, Problema, poëma : quæ veteres juxta Latinam quoque formam declinabant, additâ syllabâ *um* : ut, Hoc problematum, hoc poëmatum.

Quorum dativi & ablativi plurales adhuc in frequentiore usu sunt : ut, Problematis, poëmatis.

Q U A R.

## QUARTA DECLINATIO.

Quartæ declinationi nihil ferè difficultatis inest, Quarta declina-  
tio nomi-  
nium.  
nam duas tantum fortitur terminationes in recto  
singulari; nempe *us* & *u*: ut *Manus*, *genu*.

Veteres à nominativis *Anus*, *tumultus*, *ornatus*, di-  
xerunt *Anuis*, *tumulti*, *ornati*, in genitivo: ut,  
Ter. *Ejus anuis causâ*. Idem. *Nihil ornati, nihil tumulti*.

Dativus *ui* habet, & interdum etiam *û*: ut, *fructui*, Dativus  
singula-  
ris.  
*concupitui*: rariùs, *Fructû*, *concupitû*.

Virgilius. *Quodd neque concubitû indulgent*.

Terent. *Vestitû nimis indulges*.

Currum autem pro curruum Synæresis est; ut & in  
aliis declinationibus fieri solet.

Iesus, in accusativo Iesum habet; in reliquis verò Iesu.  
casibus ubique Iesu.

Hæc dativum & ablativum pluralem in *ubus* formant; Dativus  
Ablativus  
pluralis.  
*Acus*, *lactus*, *artus*, *arcus*, *tribus*, *ficus*, *specus*, *quercus*, & *abla-*  
*partus*, *portus*, *veru*, *ubus*.

Cætera omnia in *ibus*: ut, *Fructibus*, *foetibus*, *mani-*  
*bus*, *motibus*.

## QUINTA DECLINATIO.

Quinta declinatio genitivum, dativum & ablativum Quinta declina-  
tio nomi-  
nium.  
pluralem in paucioribus sortita est, quemadmo-  
dum infrâ in Heteroclitis fusiùs tradetur.

Olim juxta hanc declinationem flectebantur quædam  
nomina tertiæ inflectionis: ut, *Plebes*, *plebei*.

Genitivus hujus declinationis olim etiam in *es*, *ii*, & Genitivus  
pluralis.  
*e*, exibat.

Cicero. *Equites verò daturos illius dies pœnas*.

Virgilius. *Munera lætitiâque dii*.

Salustius. *Vix decimâ parte die reliquâ*.

Cæterum, præter ista quæ jam diximus, notabis et-  
iam diligenter ea nomina quæ à Grammaticis Heteroclit-  
ta dicuntur. Hæc partim variâ probatorum authorum  
eñtione, partim à sequentibus regulis discere licebit.





## DE NOMINIBUS HETEROCLITIS

Rob. Robinson.

Hetero-  
clitæ quæ  
sunt.

**Q**uæ genus aut flexum variant, quæcunque novato  
Ritu deficiunt, superantve, Heteroclitæ sunt.

### Variantia genus.

1. Fœm.  
sing.  
Neut. pl.

Hæc genus ac partim flexum variantia cernis,  
Pergamus infelix urbs Troum, Pergama gignit ;  
Quod, nisi plurali careat, facit ipsa supellex :  
singula fœmineis, neutris pluralia gaudent.

2. Neut.  
fin. mas.  
& neut.  
plur.

Dat prius his numerus neutrum genus, alter utrumque,  
Rastrum cum frano, filum, simul atque capistrum :  
Argos item & cælum sunt singula neutra ; sed audi,

3. Neut.  
fin. mas.  
tantum  
plural.

Mascula duntaxat cælos vocitabis & Argos ;  
Fræna sed & frænos, quo pacto & cætera formant.  
Nundinum, & hinc epulum, quibus addito balneum ; & hæc  
Neutra quidem primo, muliebria ritè secundo : ( sunt

4. Neut.  
fin. fœm.

Balneæ plurali Juvenalem constat habere.

pl. Excep.

Hæc maribus dantur singularia, plurima neutris,

5. Mas.

Mænalus, atque sacer mons Dindymus, Ismarus, atque

fin. neut.

Tartara, Taygetus, sic Tanora, Massica, & altus

plural.

Gargarus. At numerus genus his dabit alter utrumque,

6. mas.

Sibilus, atque jocus, locus, & Campanus Avernus.

fin. mas.

& neut.

plural.

### Defectiva.

Quæ sequitur manca est numero, casuve, propago.

### Aptota.

1. Aptota

Quæ nullum variant casum ; ut fas, nil, nihil, instar ;

2. Aptota

Multa & in u simul i ; ut sunt hæc, cornuque, genique ;

3. recto

Sic gummi, frugi ; sic Tempe, tot, quot, & omnes

non vari-

A tribus ad centum numeros, Aptota vocabis.

4. casum

Mono-

## Monoptôta.

*Estque Monoptôton nomen, cui vox cadit una ;  
Ceu noctu, natu, iussu, injussu, simul astu.  
Promptu, permissu : plurali legimus astus ;  
Legimus inficias, sed vox ea sola reperta est.*

3. Mono-  
ptôta  
sunt quæ  
unico in  
obliquo  
reperi-  
untur.

## Diptôta.

*Sunt Diptôta, quibus duplex flexura remansit :  
Ut fors forte dabit sexto, spontis quoque sponte ;  
Sic plus pluris habet, repetundarum repetundis ;  
Fugeris & sexto dat jugere, verberis autem  
Verbere, suppetiæ quarto quoque suppetias dant :  
Tantundem dat tantidem, simul impetis hoc dat  
Impete : junge vicem sexto vice ; nec lego plura.*

3. Diptô-  
ta, quæ  
duobus  
casibus

*Verberis atque vicem, sic plus, cum jugere, cunctos  
Quatuor hæc numero casus tenere secundo.*

## Triptôta.

*Ires quibus inflectis casus, Triptôta vocantur :  
Ut precis atque precem, petit & prece blandus amicam ;  
Sic opis est nostræ, fer opem legis, atque ope dignus :  
At tantum recto frugis caret, & ditionis :  
Integra vox vis est, nisi desit fortè dativus :  
Omnibus his mutilus numerus prior, integer alter.  
Quæ referunt, ut qui : quæ percontantur, ut equis :  
Et quæ distribuunt ; ut nullus, neuter, & omnis :  
Infinita solent his jungi ; ut quilibet, alter :  
Quinto hæc sæpe carent casu ; & pronomina, præter  
Quatuor hæc infra, noster, nostras, meus, & tu.*

4. Trips-  
tôta quæ  
tribus  
casibus

5. Defecti  
Vocantur

*Propria cuncta notes, quibus est natura coercens,  
Plurima nè fuerint : ut Mars, Cato, Gallia, Roma,  
Ida, Tagus, Lælaps, Parnassus, Bucephalusque.  
His frumenta dabis, pensa, herbas, uda, metalla ;  
In quibus authorum quæ sint placita ipse requiras :  
Est ubi pluralem retinent hæc, est ubi spernunt.*

6. Propria  
defect. pl.  
Frumen-  
ta, &c.  
nomina  
alia gan-  
dent, alia  
carent  
plural.

Neutra  
singulari  
carentia  
quibusc.  
casibus  
plural.  
1 Masc.  
defect.  
plural.  
2 Formi.  
carent.  
plural.

Nota.

*Hordea, farra, forum, mel, mulsum, defruta, thūsque,*  
*Tres tantum similes voces pluralia servant.*

*Hesperus & vesper, pontus, limūsque, simūsque,*  
*Sic penus & sanguis, sic æther, nemo; sed ista*  
*Mascula sunt numerum vix excedentia primum.*

*Singula fæminei generis, pluralia raro,*  
*Pubes atque salus, sic talio cum indole, tussis,*  
*Pix, humus, atque lues: fitis & fuga; junge quietem,*  
*Sic cholera atque fames, bilis̄que, sens̄cta, juventus;*  
*Sed tamen hæc, soboles, labes, ut & omnia quinta,*  
*Tres similes casus plurali sæpe tenebunt:*  
*Excipe res, species, facies, aciēsque, diēsque;*  
*Quas voces numero totas licet esse secundo.*  
*Istis multa solent multebria nec̄tere; ut hæc sunt,*  
*Stultitia, invidia, & sapientia, desidia, atque*  
*Id genus innumera voces, quas lectio præbet:*  
*Quam tibi præfixam ceu certum collige filium.*  
*Rarius his numerum, quandoque sed adde secundum.*

3. Neutra  
carentia  
plurali.

*Nec licet his neutris numerum deferre secundum,*  
*Delicium, senium, lethum, cœnumque, salumque;*  
*Sic barathrum, virus, vitrum, viscumque, penumque,*  
*Fustitium, nihilum, uer, lac, gluten, simul hæc:*  
*Adde gelu, solium, jubar. Hic quoque talia ponas,*  
*Quæ tibi, si observes, occurrent multa legenti.*

1 Masc.  
carentia  
singulari.

*Mascula sunt tantum numero contenta secundo,*  
*Manes, majores, cancelli, liberi, & antes,*  
*Menses profluvium, lemures, fasti, atque minores:*  
*Cum genus assignant natales: adde penates,*  
*Et loca plurali, quales Gabiique, Lœcrique,*  
*Et quæcunque legas passim similis rationis.*

2 Fem.  
carentia  
singulari.

*Hæc sunt fæminei generis, numerique secundi:*  
*Exuvia, phalera, gratēsque, manubiæ, & idus,*  
*Antia, & induciæ, simul insidiæque, minæque,*  
*Excubiæ, nona, nugæ, triæque, calendæ.*

*Quisquilis,*

*Quisquillia, iberma, cuna, dira, exequiaque,  
Feria, & inferia, sic primitiaque plagaque  
Retia signantes, & valva, divitiaque;  
Nuptia item & lactes: addantur Theba & Aibena:  
Quod genus invenias & nomina plura locorum.*

*Rarius hæc primo, plurali neutra leguntur,  
Mœnia, cum tesquis, præcordia, lustra ferarum,  
Arma, mapalia; sic bellaria, munia, castra;  
Fusus iusta petit, petit & sponsalia virgo,  
Rostra disertus amat; puerique crepundia gestant;  
Infantesque colunt cunabula; consulit exta  
Augur, & absolvens superis effata recantat.  
Festâ Deum poterunt, ceu Bacchanalia jungi.  
Quod si plura leges, licet hæc quoque classe reponas.*

3. Neutra  
carentia  
singulari.

## Redundantia.

*Hæc quasi luxuriant, varias imitantia formas:  
Nam genus & vocem variant, tonitrus tonitruque.  
Sic clypeus clypeum, baculus baculum, atque bacillum,  
Sensus & hoc sensum, tignus tignumque, tapetum  
Atque tapete tapes, punctus punctumque; sinapi,  
Quod genus immutans fertur scelerata sinapis.  
Sinus & hoc sinum vas lactis, mendæque mendum,  
Viscus & hoc viscum, sic cornu & flexile cornum.  
At Lucanus ait, Cornus tibi cura sinistri:  
Eventus simul eventum. Sed quid moror istis?  
Talia doctorum tibi lectio mille ministrat.*

1. Redun-  
dantia.

*Sed tibi præterea quædam sunt Græca notanda,  
Quæ quarto casu fœtum peperere Latinum:  
Nam panther panthera creat, crateraque crater;  
Cassida cassis habet, sed & æther æthera fundit:  
Hinc cratera venit, venit æthera; sic caput ipsum  
Cassida magna tegit, nec vult panthera domari.*

2. Nomi-  
nativi ex  
accusati-  
vis Græ-  
cis in a.

*Vertitur his rectus, sensus manet, & genus unum:  
Gibbus & hic gibber, cucumis cucumer, stipis & stips;*

3. Rec-  
tum va-  
riantia.

Sic

\* Potius  
Odor.

*Sic cinis atque ciner, vomis vomer, scobis & scobs;  
Pulvis item pulver, pubes puber: quibus addes  
Qua pariunt or & os, honor, & labor, arbor, \* adorque;  
His & apes & apis, plebs plebis: sunt quoque multa  
Accepta à Græcis, geminam referentia formam;  
Ut delphin delphinus, & hic elephas elephantus,  
Sic congrus conger, Meleagrus sic Meleager,  
Teucus item Teucer: Dabis huc & cætera cuncta,  
Qua tibi par ratio dederint, & lectio casta.*

4 Declinationem  
variantia.

*Hæc simul & quarti flexus sunt atque secundi:  
Laurus enim lauri facit & laurus genitivo;  
Sic quercus, pinus, pro fructu ac arbore ficus;  
Sic colus, atque penus, cornus quando arbor habetur;  
Sic lacus atque domus: licet hæc nec ubique recurrant:  
His quoque plura leges, quæ priscis jure relinquant.*

5 Adjectiva luxuriantia.

*Et quæ luxuriant sunt adjectiva notanda  
Multa, sed imprimis quot & hæc tibi nomina fundunt;  
Arma, jugum, nervus, somnus, clivusque, animusque,  
Et quot limus habet, quot frænum, & cera, bacillum:  
A quibus us simul is formes; ut inermus inermis:  
Rarior est hilarus, vox est hilaris bene nota.*

## COMPARATIO NOMINUM.

Nominum  
comparatio.  
Positivus  
gradus.  
Comparativus.

**C**omparantur nomina, quorum significatio augeri  
minuive potest.

Gradus comparationis sunt tres.

Positivus, qui rem sine excessu significat: ut, Albus, niger, probus, improbus.

Comparativus, qui significationem sui positivi per adverbium magis auget: ut Albior, probior, id est, Magis albus, magis probus. Fit autem regulariter à secundo positivi casu in additâ syllabâ or: ut, ab Amici, pudici, fit amicior, pudicior.

Superlativus.

Superlativus, qui supra positivum cum adverbio Valde vel Maxime significat; ut,

Docti-

Doctissimus, } id est, valdè } Doctus.  
Justissimus, } vel maximè } Justus.

Fit autem regulariter à primo positivi casu in *i* adjectis & *simus* : ut, à Candidi, prudenti, fit Candidissimus, prudentissimus.

Quæ verò positiva in *r* desinunt, adjecto *rimus* superlativum formant : ut Pulcher, pulcherrimus ; Niger, nigerrimus. In rimus.

Excipiuntur, Dextimus à Dexter, Maturimus, sive Maturissimus, ab antiquo Matur.

Sex ista in *lis*, superlativum formant mutando *lis* in *limus*. In lis.  
*limus* : nempe, Facilis, facillimus : Docilis, docillimus : Agilis, agillimus : Gracilis, gracillimus : Humilis, humillimus : Similis, simillimus.

Quæ derivantur à Dico, loquor, volo, facio, ad hunc modum comparantur : Maledicus, maledicentior, maledicentissimus, à dico : Magniloquus, magniloquentior, magniloquentissimus, à loquor. Derivat. à dico, loquor, &c.

Plautus tamen à mendaciloquus, & confidentiloquus, usurpat mendaciloquius, & confidentiloquius.

Benevolus, } *volo* } Magnus, } *facio*  
Benevolentior, } } Magnificentior, }  
Benevolentissimus, } } Magnificentissimus. }

Quoties vocalis præcedit *us* finale, comparatio fit per adverbium Magis & Maximè : ut, Idoneus, magis Idoneus, maximè Idoneus. Arduus, magis arduus, maximè arduus. Comparatio nominum in us putum.

### COMPARATIO INUSITATIO.

Interim acre judicium adhibendum est, ut quæ in legendis authoribus rarò occurrunt, rarò itidem usurpentur.

Cujusmodi sunt quæ sequuntur.

Affiduior, strenuior, egregiissimus, mirificissimus, pi-entissimus vel piissimus, ipissimus.

Perpetuissimus, } } Exiguissimus, apud Ovidium.  
Tuisissimus. } } Multissimus, apud Ciceronem.

COMPA



## COMPARATIO ANOMALA.

Bonus, mellor, optimus. Malus, pejor, pessimus.  
 Magnus, major, maximus. Parvus, minor, minimus.  
 Multus plurimus, multa plurima, multum plus plurimum. Vetus, veterior, veterrimus. Deterior, deterri-  
 mus; ab antiquo deter. Nequam, nequior, nequissimus.  
 Citrà, citerior, citimus. Intrà, interior, intimus. Infrà,  
 inferior, infimus. Extrà, exterior, extimus vel extremus.  
 Suprà, superior, supremus vel summus. Pòst, poste-  
 rior, postremus. Ultrà, ulterior, ultimus. Propè, pro-  
 prior, proximus; à quo proximior, apud *Ovidium*. Pridem,  
 prior, primus. Diu, diutior, diutissimus. Sæpe, sæpius,  
 sæpissimé.

## COMPARATIO DEFECTIVA.

Compa-  
ratio  
manca.

Inclutus,	}	Meritus,
Inclutissimus.		Meritissimus.
Opimus,	}	Sinister,
Opimior.		
Ocyor,	} ab <i>οξύς</i> .	Sinisterior.
Ocyssimus.		
Novus,	}	Juvenis,
Novissimus.		Junior.
Adolescens,	}	Senex,
Adolescentior.		
Potior,	}	Senior,
Potissimus.		Maximus natu.
Longinquus,	}	Ante,
Longinquior.		Anterior.
Pene,	}	Nuper,
Penissimus.		Nuperrimus.

Compa-  
ratio a-  
busiva.

Interdum autem à substantivis fit comparatio, sed  
 abusivè :

ut,	{	Neronior,	{	à	{	Nerone.
		Cinædior,				Cinædo.
		Pœnior,				Pœno.

Com-

Comparationum Typus.

SINGULARITER.

| *Positivus.* | *Compar.* | *Super.*

	<p><i>Doctus,</i> <i>Tener,</i> <i>Dulcis,</i> <i>Felix.</i> <i>Prudens.</i></p>		
Nom.	<p><i>us er is</i> <i>a is x ns</i> <i>um e</i></p>	<p><i>ior</i> <i>ior</i> <i>ius</i></p>	<p><i>mus</i> <i>ma</i> <i>num</i></p>
Gen.	<p><i>i</i> <i>is</i> <i>a</i> <i>i</i></p>	<p><i>ioris</i></p>	<p><i>mi</i> <i>ma</i> <i>mi</i></p>
Dat.	<p><i>o</i> <i>a</i> <i>i</i> <i>o</i></p>	<p><i>iori</i></p>	<p><i>mo</i> <i>ma</i> <i>mo</i></p>
Accus.	<p><i>um em em em</i> <i>am em em em</i> <i>um e ex ns</i></p>	<p><i>iorem</i> <i>iorem</i> <i>ius</i></p>	<p><i>num</i> <i>nam</i> <i>num</i></p>
Voc.	<p><i>e er is</i> <i>a is</i> <i>ume</i></p>	<p><i>ior</i> <i>ior</i> <i>ius</i></p>	<p><i>me</i> <i>ma</i> <i>num</i></p>
Ablat.	<p><i>o</i> <i>a</i> <i>o</i></p>	<p><i>iore</i> <i>iori</i></p>	<p><i>mo</i> <i>ma</i> <i>mo</i></p>

Com-

Comparationum Typus.			
P L U R A L I T E R.			
<i>Positivus.</i>   <i>Compar.</i>   <i>Super.</i>			
	Docti. Teneri. Dulces. Fœlices. Prudentes.		
Nom.	i es æ es a ia	iores iores iora	{ mi mæ ma
Gen.	{ orum arum } ium orum	iorum	{ morum marum morum
Dat.	is ibus	ioribus	mis
Accus.	{ os es as es a ia	iores iores iora	{ mos mas ma
Voc.	{ i es æ es a ia	iores iores iora	{ mi mæ ma
Ablat.	is ibus	ioribus	mis.

## DE PRONOMINE. 37

**P**RONOMEN est pars orationis, quâ in demonstranda aut repetenda re aliqua utimur.  
Pronomina sunt quindecim ; Ego, tu, sui, ille, ipse, iste, hic, is, meus, tuus, suus, noster, vester, nostras, vestras.

Quibus addi possunt & sua composita : ut, Egomet, tute, idem, & similia : ut etiam, qui, quæ quod.

### DE ACCIDENTIBUS PRONOMINI.

Accidunt Pronomini Species, Numerus, Casus, Genus, Declinatio, Persona, Figura.

Species pronominum est duplex ; Primitiva & Derivativa.

Ad Primitiva spectant ista ; Ego, tu, sui, ille, ipse, iste, hic, is.

Ex Primitivis alia sunt demonstrativa, alia relativa.

Demonstrativa, dicuntur eadem, quæ & Primitiva, nimirum, Ego, tu, sui, ille, ipse, iste, hic, is.

Relativa autem sunt, Ille, ipse, iste, hic, is, idem, qui.

Derivativa sunt Meus, tuus, suus, noster, vester, nostras, vestras.

Derivativorum alia sunt Possessiva, alia Gentilia.

Possessiva sunt Meus, tuus, suus, noster, vester.

Gentilia ex eo dicuntur, quod gentem aut nationem, vel partes & sectas significant : ut, nostras, vestras, & Cujas nomen.

### DE NUMERO.

Numerus pronominum duplex est ; Singularis, ut, Ego ; Pluralis, ut, Nos.

### DE CASU.

Casus autem sunt sex, quemadmodum in nomine ; vocativo carent omnia pronomina, præter hæc quatuor, Tu, meus, noster, nostras. *Martialis* tamen pronomini ipse vocativum tribuere videtur, quum ait,

*Ut Martis revocetur amor, summique Tonantis,*

*A te Juno petat ceston, & ipsa Venus.*

Accidentia pronomini.  
Pronominum species.

Primitiva.

Demonstrativa.

Relativa  
Derivativa.

Possessiva.

Gentilia.

Numerus in pronomine.

Casus in pronomine.



Nom. { Iſtic, } Accuſ. { iſtunc, } Ablat. { iſtoc, } 1. Inter  
 { iſtæc, } { iſtanc, } { iſtac, } ſe.  
 { iſtoc, vel iſtuc. } { iſtoc, vel iſtuc. } { iſtæc. }

Pluraliter Nominativo & Accuſativo Iſtæc. Eodem modo declinatur & illic, illæc, illoç.

Componuntur etiam cum nominibus : ut, cujuſmodi, huiſmodi, illiuſmodi, iſtiuſmodi. 2. Cum nomi-ni-bus.

Componuntur & cum præpoſitionibus : ut, Mecum, tecum, ſecum, nobiſcum, vobiſcum, quicum, quibuſ-cum. 3. Cum præpoſi-tionibus.

Componuntur etiam & cum adverbiis : ut, Singular. 4. Cum adver-biis.

Eccum, { ab Ec- } Ellum, { ab Ecce & ille. }  
 Eccam, { ce & is } Ellam, { Ut & Idem }  
 Eccos, { } Ellos, { quoque, ab is }  
 Eccas, { } Ellas, { & demum. }

Cum conjunctione quoque componuntur : ut, Sing. 5. Cum conjun-ctione.  
 Nominativo Hiccinæ, hæccinæ, hoccinæ. Accuſativo, hunccinæ, hanccinæ, hoccinæ. Ablativo hoccinæ, hæccinæ, hoccinæ. Pluraliter, Hæccinæ, neutrum.

Componuntur denique cum ſyllabicis adjectionibus : ut, Met, te, ce, pre. Cum Syl-laba ad-ject. Met.

Met adjectitur primæ & ſecundæ perſonæ : ut, Ego met, meimet, mihimet, memet, noſmet, &c. Sic Si-bimet quoque, ac ſemet dicimus.

Tumet autem in recto non dicimus, ne putetur eſſe verbum à tumeo, ſed tuimet, tibi-met, temet, noſmet, &c.

Te adjectitur iſtis, Tu, ut, tute ; te, ut, tete. Te,

Ce adjectitur obliquis horum pronominum, Hic, ille, iſte, quoties in s deſinunt ; ut, Huiſce, hiſce, illiuſce, iſtiuſce, hoſce, illoſce, iſtoſce. Ce.

Pre apponi-tur iſtis abla-tivis. { Meâ, } { Meapte. } Pre.  
 { Tuâ, } { Tuapte, }  
 { Suâ, } { Suapte, }  
 { Noſtrâ, } { Noſtrapte. }  
 { Veſtrâ, } { Veſtrapte. }  
 H Inter-

Interdum etiam masculinis & neutris adjici solet: ut Meopte Marte, tuopte labore, suopte jumento, nostroptе damno, &c.

Quis & Qui ad hunc modum componuntur.

Quis.

Quis in compositione hisce particulis postponitur.

En,	} ut,	Ecquis,	} Et hæc tam in foeminino	
Ne,		Necquis,		singulari, quàm in neutro
Alius,		Aliquis,		plurali, quæ habent, non
Num,		Nunquis,		quæ: ut, Siqua mulier,
Si,		Siquis.		Nequa flagitia, &c.

Ecquis.

Præter Ecquis, quod utrumque in foeminino habere reperitur, Ecquæ & Ecqua.

His autem particulis præponitur Quis in compositione,

Nam,	} ut,	Quisnam,	} Et hæc ubique (præ-	
Piam,		Quispian,		terquam in ablativo
Putas,		Quisputas,		singulari) quæ habent,
Quam,		Quisquam,		non quæ: ut, Quænam
Que,		Quisque.		doctrina? Negotia quæ-
		pian, Optima quæque.		

Quis.

Quis etiam cum seipso componitur: ut, Quisque, quod & in hunc modum variatur:

Nominativo Quisque, quicquid: Accusativo Quicquid: Ablativo Quoquo, quaquæ, quoquo.

Qui.

Qui in compositione præponitur his particulis.

Dam,	} ut,	Quidam,	} Et hæc ubique (præ-	
Vis,		Quivis,		terquam in ablativo
Libet,		Quilibet,		singulari) quæ reti-
Cunq;		Quicunq;		nent, non quæ: ut,
				Quædam puella, Quæcunque facinora.

## DE VERBO.

**V**erbum est pars orationis, quæ modis & temporibus inflexa, esse aliquid, agereve, aut pati significat: ut, Sum, existo: moveo, moveor: tango, tangor.

Verbum



Verbum dividitur imprimis in personale: ut Doceo, & impersonale, ut Oportet.

Personale est, quod certis personis distinguitur: ut, Verbum  
Personale.  
Ego lego, Tu legis, Hic legit, Illi legunt.

Contra, Impersonale dicitur, quod diversarum personarum vocibus non distinguitur nec variatur: ut, Verbum  
Impersonale.  
Poenitet, tædet, miseret, oportet.

DE ACCIDENTIBUS VERBO.

Verbo quidem accidunt ista; Genus, modus, tempus, figura, species, persona, numerus, conjugatio.

DE GERE.

Quinque sunt verborum genera, { Activum, } Deponens,  
Passivum, }  
Neutrum, } Commune.

ACTIVUM.

Activum est, quod agere significat, & in o finitum, Activum.  
passivum in or formare potest: ut, Doceo, doceor. Legor, legor.

PASSIVUM.

Passivum est, quod pati significat, & in or finitum, Passivum.  
activi formam, r dempto, resumere potest: ut, Amor, amo: Afficior, afficio.

NEUTRUM.

Neutrum est, quod in o vel in m finitum, nec activam, nec passivam formam integrè induere potest: ut, Neutrum.  
Curro, ambulo, jaceo, sum.

Neutrorum tria sunt genera.

Nam aliud Substantivum dicitur; ut, Sum, es, est, Neutrum  
substantivum.  
sumus, &c. Aliud Absolutum; sic dictum quod ipsum per se sensum absolvat.

Atque hoc rursus duplex est: Nam alterum actionem completam in ipso verbo significat, nec in aliud transeuntem: ut, Ambio, dormio, pluit, ningit; alterum verò passionem in ipso completam indicat: ut, Neutrum  
absolutum.  
palleo, rubeo, albescio, nigresco.

Verbum  
genus  
Neutr.

Est præterea & aliud, cujus actio in rem cognatæ significationis transit, ac tertiam personam passivæ vocis usurpat: ut,

Bibo vinum,

Curro stadium,

Vivo vitam,

Vinum bibitur.

Stadium curritur.

Vita vivitur.

Sunt denique, quæ simplicia quidem neutra sunt, composita verò agendi vim concipiunt: ut, Eo, adeo, mingo, commingo.

### DEPONENTS.

Depo-  
nens.

Deponens, quod in *or* finitum, vel activi significationem habet: ut, Loquor verbum: vel neutrius, ut, Philosophor.

### COMMUNE.

Com-  
mune.

Commune, quod in *or* finitum, tam activam quàm passivam significationem obtinet: ut, Veneror, criminor, confolor, stipulor, speculor, osculor, adulor, frustror, dignor, testor, interpretor, amplector, meditor, experior, ementior, multaque id genus alia quæ passim apud veteres reperias.

### DE MODO.

Modi verborum sex enumerantur.

Indica-  
tivus.

Indicativus, qui simpliciter aliquid fieri, aut non fieri definit: ut, *Probitas laudatur & alget*. Hic modus aliquando per interrogationem usurpatur: ut *Quis legit hac?* Aliquando per dubitationem: ut, *An in astu venit aliud ex alio malum?*

Impera-  
tivus.

Imperativus, quo inter imperandum utimur. Hic modus futurum non habet, sed præsens duplex: ut apud Propertium; *Aut si es dura, nega; sin es non dura, venito*.

Virg. *Tityre, dum redeo (brevis est via) pasce capellas;*

*Et potum pastas age, Tityre, & inter agendum*

*Occursare capro (cornu ferit ille) caveto.*

Præteritum autem à Subjunctivo mutuatur.

Cic. *Sed amabo te, nihil incommodo valetudinis tuæ feceris.*

Marc' ai. *Dic quibus es, quanti cupias cœnare? nec ullum*

*Addideris verbum, cœna parata tibi est.*

Quin

Quin & illa passiva, Præceptum sit, dictum sit, determinatum sit, præteriti Imperativi esse fatetur Priscianus.

Hic modus etiam permissivus dicitur, quod interdum per hunc permissio significetur: ut,

*Si sine pace tua, atque invito Numine Troes  
Italiam petière, fiant peccata, nec illos Furveris auxilio.*

Denique aliquando etiam suppositivus, aut hortativus appellatur: ut Virgilius,

*—Eamus, & in media arma ruamus.*

Optativus, quo optamus fieri rem aliquam; nec refert factane sit, an fiat, an sit facienda: ut, *Utinam* <sup>Optat-  
vus.</sup> bonis literis suis detur honos.

Modus Optativus, Potentialis, & Subjunctivus, quique separata eisdem vocibus tempora habere videntur; ut est author Linacrus. Præterea notandum est præsens hujus modi assumere quandoque significationem futuri: ut, *Utinam* aliquando tecum loquar.

Potentialis, quo posse, velle, aut debere fieri aliquid significamus: ut, *Expectes eadem à summo, minimeque poeta;* pro *potes expectare.* Non expectes, ut statim gratias agat, qui sanatur invitus; pro *non debes expectare.* Quis enim rem tam veterem pro certo affirmet? pro vult affirmare.

Græci hunc modum nunc per Indicativum, nunc per Optativum & Particulam *ἄν* exprimunt. <sup>Græcorum op-  
tandi  
modus.</sup>

Subjunctivus, qui nisi alteri subjiatur orationi, vel alteram sibi subjectam orationem habeat, per se sententiam non absolvit: ut, <sup>Subjunc-  
tivus.</sup>

*Si fueris felix, multos numerabis amicos:*

*Tempora si fuerint nubila, solus eris.*

Temporum igitur vocibus hi tres modi per omnia (sicut dictum est) conveniunt: discernuntur verò significatu, & signis. Optativus enim semper adheret adverbio cuiuspiam optandi: ut, *Utinam* veniat aliquando tempus. Potentialis vero neque ullum adverbium adiunctum habet, nec conjunctionem. Subjunctivus au-

tem semper aliquam conjunctionem annexam habet: ut,  
*Si venero; Ut taceas; Cum cana vero.*

Infinitivus.

Infinitivus, qui agere quidem aut pati significat, at  
 citra certam numeri & personæ differentiam: ut, *Malim*  
*probus esse, quam haberi.*

## D E T E M P O R E.

Tempora sunt quinque.

Præsens.

Præsens, quo actio nunc geri significatur: ut,  
*Scribo.*

Imperfectum.

Imperfectum, quo prius quidem aliquid in agendo  
 fuisse significatur, non tamen absolutam tunc temporis  
 fuisse actionem: ut,

*Virgil. Hic templum Junoni ingens Sidonia Dido*  
*Condebat: Erat enim adhuc in opere.*

Perfectum.

Perfectum, quo præterita absolutæque significatur  
 actio. Hoc in Passivis, Deponentibus, & Communibus,  
 duplex est, & ob id duplici circuitione explicatum:  
 Alterum, quo proxime præteritum exprimitur: ut,  
*Pransus sum:* Alterum, quo ulterius præteritum in-  
 dicatur: ut, *Pransus fui.* Non enim, si modo *pransus*  
*fis, pransus fui* commodè aptève dixeris.

Plusquam perfectum.

Plusquam perfectum, quo actio jamdiu præterita  
 significatur.

Futurum, quo res in futuro gerenda significatur.

Hic promissivus modus à nonnullis vocatur, quod  
 videatur aliquid promittere, aut velle facere: ut,  
*Ovid. Ibimus, & Nympha, monstratæque saxa petemus.*

Hujus aliud genus est, quod Exactum vocant: ut,  
*Videro, abiero.*

Ter. *Si te æquo animo ferre accipiet, negligentem feceris.*

Quod quidem exactum futurum etiam in Subjunctivo  
 modo reperitur: ut,

Pla. *Ero securior dum legam, statimque timebo cum legero.*

## D E F I G U R A.

Figura est duplex: Simplex, ut, *Facio;* Composita,  
 ut, *Calcfacio.*

Verba

Verba composita quorum simplicia exoleverunt, sunt, Defendo, offendo, aspicio, conspicio, adipiscor, experior, comperior, expedio, impedio, deleo, imbuo, compello, appello, incendo, accendo, ingruo, congruo, infligo, instigo, impleo, compleo, & id genus alia.

Quædam etiam videntur à Græcis nata: ut, Impleo, à πλῖν. Percello, à κάλλω.

DE SPECIE.

Species est duplex.

Primitiva, quæ est prima verbi positio: ut, Ferveo. Primiti-

Derivativa, quæ à Primitiva deducitur, ut, fervesco. va.

Derivativorum genera sunt quinque. Deriva-

Inchoativa, à Grammaticis appellata (quæ *Valla* tiva.  
*meditativa* potius, & *augmentativa* appellat,) in Inchoa-  
*cho* desinunt: ut, Labasco, calesco, ingemisco, edor- tiva.  
misco.

Hæc autem inchoationem significant, ut, Lucescit, id est, *Incipit lucere, aut certe gliscere & intendi*: ut apud Virgil. *Expleri mentem nequit, ardescitque tuendo*: hoc est, *magis magisque urdet*. Ex his pleraque pro thematibus primarius usurpantur: ut, *Timeſco, hisco, conticeſco*, id est, *Timeo, hio, taceo*.

Frequentativa desinunt in *to, ſo, xo, aut tor*: ut, Vi- Frequent-  
ſito, affecto, ſcriptito, pulſo, viſo, quaſſo, nexo, tæxo, ativa.  
vexo, ſector, ſcitor, ſciſcitor. Significant autem vel aſſiduitatem quandam, vel conatum: ut, Dictito, id est, *frequenter dico*; viſo, id est, *eo ad videndum*.

Huc pertinent & illa, vellico, fodico, albico, & fi- Appara-  
milis id genus, quæ à Grammaticis etiam Apparativa tiva.  
appellari ſolent.

Deſiderativa finiunt in *urio*: ut, Lecturio, parturio, Deſide-  
eſurio, coenaturio. Hæc ad ſignificationem ſuorum rativa.  
Primitivorum ſtudium, atque appetentiam quandam que  
adijciunt: ut, Lecturio, id est, *Legere cupio*; Coena-  
turio, id est, *Cupio canare*.

Diminutiva.

Imitativa.

Diminutiva, in *lo*, vel *ſſo*, exeunt: ut, Sorbillo, cantillo, pitillo, id est, *parum ac modice*, sorbeo, canto, bibo.

Imitativa sunt, quæ imitationem significant: ut, Patrisso, Atticisso, Platonisso. At Latini hæc formâ non adeo delectati sunt: unde pro Græcisso, Græcor usi sunt: ut, Cornicor, à cornice; Vulpinor, à vulpe; Bacchor, à Baccho.

### DE PERSONA.

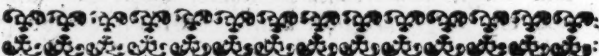
Tres sunt verbi personæ: Prima, ut Lego; Secunda, ut Legis; Tertia, ut Legit.

### DE NUMERO.

Numeri sunt duo; Singularis, ut Lego; Pluralis, ut Legimus.

### DE CONJUGATIONE.

Quandoquidem de conjugandorum verborum ratione in rudimentis Anglicis traditum est, quæ pueri tanquam ungues suos exactissime callere debent: proximum fuerit ut hæ Gulielmi Lili de præteritis & supinis regulæ (lucidissimæ quidem illæ, compendiosissimæque, nec lanè minus utiles) pari aviditate imbibantur.



As avi.

\* Hyper-

metet

verus

plus iusto

una syllaba

con-

stat, sed

colliden-

da cum

prima

vocē se-

quentis

versus,

id quod

omnium

commu-

ne est.

## G. LIL. DE SIMPLICIUM

Verborum primæ Conjugationis  
communis Præterito.



*S* in præsentis perfectum format in avi;

Uti, no nas navi, vocita vocitas vocitavi.

Deme lavo lavi, juvo juvi, nexog; nexui; \*

Et seco quod secui, neco quod necui, mico verbum

Quod micui, plico quod plicui, frico quod fricui

Sic domo quod domui, tono quod tonui, sono verbum

Quod sonui, arepo, quod crepui, vero quod vetui dat.

Atque cubo cubui: ræd hæc formantur in avi.

Do das ræd dedi, sto stas formare fieri vult.

Secun-



Secundæ Conjugationis commune  
Præteritum.

**E** S in præsentî perfectum format ut dans  
Ut nigreo, nigras, nigrui : jubeo excipe jussi,  
Sorbeo sorbui habet, sorpsi quoque, mulceo mulsi ;  
Luceo vult luxi, sedeo sedi, videoque  
Vult vidi ; sed prandeo prandi, strideo stridi,  
Suadeo suasi, rideo risi, habet ardeo & arsi.

Es ul

Quatuor his infra geminatur syllaba prima :  
Pendeo namque pependi, mordeo vultque momordi,  
Spondeo habere spondendi, tondeo vultque totondi.

L vel R ante geo si stet, geo vertitur in si ;  
Urgeo ut urfi, mulgeo mulsi, dat quoque mulxi.  
Frigeo frixi, lugeo luxi, habet augeo & auxi.

Geo.

Dat fleo fles fleui, leo les leui, indeque natum  
Deleo deleui, pleo ples pleui, neo neui :  
A maneo mansi formatur : torqueo torfi,  
Hæreo vult hafi. Veo fit vi ; ut serueo serui,  
Niveo & inde satum poscit conniveo nivi  
Et nixi : cieo civi, vieoque vieui.

Veo.

Tertia Conjugatio.

**T**ertia præteritum formabit ut hîc manifestum.

Bo fit bi, ut lambi lambi, scribo excipe scripsi,  
Et nubo nupsi ; antiquum cumbo cubui dat.

Bo.

Co fit ci, ut vinco vici : vult parco pepercî  
Et parsi, dico dixi, duco quoque duxi.

Co.

Do fit di, ut mando mandi : sed scindo scidi dat,  
Findo fidi, fundo fudi, tundo tutudique ;  
Pendo pependi, tendo tetendi, pedo pepedi :  
Funge cado cecidi, pro verbero cædo cecidi.

Do.

Cedo pro discedere, sive locum dare, cessi :  
Vado, rado, lædo, ludo, divido, trudo,  
Claudo, plaudo, rado, ex do semper facient si.

Cedo.

Go



Go.

Go fit xi, ut jungo junxi: sed r ante go vult si;  
 Ut spargo sparsi: lego legi, & ago facit egi;  
 Dat vango tetigi, pango punxi pupugique:  
 Dat frango frogi, cum signat pango pacisci,  
 Vult pepigi; pro jungo, pegi; pro cano, panxi.

Ho.

Lo.

Ho fit xi, trabo ceu traxi docet, & veho vexti.  
 Lo fit ui, colo ceu colui: psallo excipe cum p;  
 Et fallo sine p; nam salli format utrumque:  
 Dat vello velli, vulsi quoque, fallo seselli,  
 Collo pro frango, ceculi: pello populique.

Mo.

Mo fit ui, vomo ceu vomui: sed emo facit emi;  
 Como petit compsi, promo prompsi: adjice demo  
 Quod format dempsi, sumo sumpsi, premo pressi.

No.

No fit vi, sino ceu sivi: temno excipe tempfi;  
 Dat sterno stravi, sperno sfrevi: lino levi,  
 Interdum lini & livi; cerno quoque crevi:  
 Gigno, pono, cano, genui, posui, cetini dar.

Po.

Po fit pli, ut scalpo scalpsi; rumpo excipe rupi;  
 Et strepo quod format strepui, crepo quod crepui dar.

Quo.

Ro.

Quo fit qui, ut linquo liqui: coquo demito coxi.  
 Ro fit vi, sero ceu pro planto & semino, sevi,  
 Quod serui melius dat mutans significatum:  
 Vult verro verri & versi, uro ussi, gero gessi,  
 Quaro quasvi, tero trivi, curro cucurri.

So.

So, velut accerso, arcesso, incesso, atque lacecco,  
 Formabit fivi: Sed tolle capecco capepsi,  
 Quodque capepsi facit, atque facecco facepsi.  
 Sic viso visi: sed pinso pinsui habebit.

Sco.

Sco fit vi, ut pascio pavi: vult posco poposci,  
 Vult didici disco, quexi formare quinisco.

To.

To fit ti, ut verro verti: sed sisto notetur.  
 Pro facio stare, activum, nam jure stiti dar.  
 Dat mitto misi, petii peto sive petivi.

Sterio stertui habet, meto messui: ab ecto fit exi,  
 Ut flecto flexi: pecto dar pexui, habetque  
 Pexi; etiam necto dar nexui, habet quoque nexi.

Vo.

Vo fit vi, ut volvo volvi: vivop excipe vixi.

Next

# VERBUM.

49

*Nexo ut nexui habet, fit texo texui habebit.*

*Fit cio ci: ut facio feci, jacio quoque jeci;*

*Antiquum lacio lexi, specio quoque spexi.*

*Fit dio di, ut Fodio fodi. Gio, ceu fugio gi.*

*Fit pio pi, ut capio cepi: cupio excipe pivi,*

*Et rapio rapui, sapio sapui atque sapivi.*

*Fit rio ri, ut pario peperit. Tio si, geminan. t.*

*Et quatio quassi, quod vix reperitur in usu.*

*Denique uo fit ui, ut statuo statui: pluo pluvi*

*Format, frve plui; struo sed struxi, fluo fluxi.*

Ko.

Cio.

Dio, Gio,

Pio.

Rio.

Tio.

Uo.

## Quarta Conjugatio.

**Q**uarta dat is ivi, ut monstrat scio scis tibi scivi:

*Excipias venio dans veni, cambio campsi,*

*Raucio rausi, sarcio sarsi, sarcio sarsi,*

*Sepio sepsi, sentio sensi, fulcio fulsi,*

*Haurio item hausi, sancio sanxi, vincio vinxi,*

*Pro salto salio salui, & amicio \* amicui dat;*

*Parcius utemur cambivi, baurivi, amicivi,*

*Sepivi, sancivi, sarcivi, atque salivi.*

Is, ivi,

Excipe

venio,

cambio,

&c.

\*Pes pro-

celestinus

ticus.

## De Compositorum Verborum Præteritis.

**P**ræteritum dat idem simplex & compositivum,

*Ut docui edocui monstrat. Sed syllaba semper,*

*Quam simplex geminat, composito non geminatur:*

*Præterquam tribus his, præcurro, excurro, repungo:*

*Atque à do, disco, sto, posco, ritè creatis.*

*A plico compositum sum sub, vel nomine, ut ista,*

*Supplico, multiplico, gaudent formare plicavi:*

*Applico, complico, reptico & explico, ui vel in avi.*

*Quamvis vult oleo simplex olui, tamen inde*

*Quodvis compositum melius formabit olevi:*

*Simplicis at formam redolet sequitur, subolerique.*

*Composita à pungo formabunt omnia punxi.*

Plico.

Olco.

Pungo.

Vuls

**Do.** Vult unum pupugi, interdumque repungo repunxi.  
 Natum à do, quando est inflexio tertia ut addo,  
 Credo, edo, dedo, reddo, perdo, abdo, vel obdo,  
**Sto.** Condo, indo, trado, prodo, vendo, didi : at unum  
 Abscondo, abscondi. Natum à sto, stas stiti habebit.

## Mutantia primam vocalem in E.

**V**erba hæc simplicia presentis, præteritque,  
 Si componantur, vocalem primam in e mutant :  
**Pario.** Damno, lacto, sacro, fallo, arceo, tracto, fatiscor,  
 Partio, carpo, patro, scando, spargo ; parioque,  
 Cujus nata per i duo comperit & reperit dant :  
 Cætera sed perui ; velut hæc, aperire, operire.  
**Pasco.** A pasco pavi : tantum composita notentur  
 Hæc duo, compesco, dispesco, pelcui habere :  
 Cætera, ut epasco, servabunt simplicis usum.

## Mutantia primam vocalem in I.

**Hæc.** \* habeo, lateo, salio, statuo, cado, lædo,  
 Pango das pegi, cano, quero, cædo cecidi.  
 Tango, egeo, teneo, taceo, sapio, rapioque,  
 Si componantur, vocalem primam in i mutant :  
**Cano.** Ut rapio rapui, eripio eripui : à cano natum,  
 Præteritum per ui, ceu concino concinui dat.  
**Placeo.** A placeo sio displiceo ; sed simplicis usum  
 Hæc duo, complaceo cum perplaceo, bene servant.  
**Pango.** Composita à pango retinent a quatuor ista,  
 Depango, oppango, circumpango atque repango.  
**Maneo.** A maneo mansi, minui dant quatuor ista,  
 Præmineo, emineo, cum promiteo, immineoque :  
 Simplicis at verbi servabunt cætera formam.  
**Scalpo.** Composita à scalpo, calco, salto, a per u mutant ;  
 calco, salto, Id tibi demonstrant, exculpo, inculco, resulto.  
**Claudo.** Composita à claudio, quatio, lavo, rejiciunt a :  
 quatio, Id docet à claudio, occludo, excludo : à quatioque,  
 lavo, Percutio, excutio : à lavo, proluo, diluo, nata.

Mutantia primam vocalem in *I*,  
præterquam in præterito.

**H**Æc si componas, Ago, emo, sedeo, rego, frango,  
Et capio, jacio, lasio, specio, premo, semper  
Vocalem primam præsentis in *i* sibi mutant,

Præteriti nunquam, ceu frango, refringo refrégi :

A capio incipio incepti. Sed pauca notentur :

Namque suum simplex perago sequitur, satagóque.

Atque ab ago dego dat, degi, cogo coegi :

A rego sic pergo perrexí, vult quoque surgo

Surrexi, mediâ præsentis syllabâ ademptâ.

Nil variat facio, nisi prapósito præeunte :

Id docet olsacio, cum calfacio, infacioque.

A lego nata, re, \* se, per, præ, sub, trans, præeunte,

Præsentis servant vocalem, in *i* cætera mutant :

De quibus hæc, intelligo, diligo, negligo, tantum

Præteritum lexi faciunt ; reliqua omnia legi.

Excipi-  
tur Co-  
emo.

Ago.

Rego.

Facio.

Lego.

De simplicium verborum supinis.

**N**unc ex præterito discas formare Supinum.

Bi sibi tum format, sic namque bibi bibitum fit.

Ci fit etum ; ut vici victum, testatur ut ici

Dans ictum ; feci factum, jeci quoque jactum.

Di fit sum, ut vidi visum : quadam geminant *s* ;

Ut pandi passum, sedi sessum : adde scidi quod

Dat scissum, atque fidi fissum, fodi quoque fossam.

Hic etiam advertas, quod syllaba prima supinis

Quam vult præteritum geminari, non geminatur :

Idque totondi dans tonsam docet, atque cecidi

Quod casum, & decidi quod dat casum, atque tetendi

Quod tensum & tentum, tutudi tonsam, atque pepedi

Quod format peditum ; adde dedi quod jure datum vult.

Gi fit etum, ut legi lectum : pegi pepigique

Dat pactum, fregi fractum, tetigi quoque tactum,

Egi actum, pupugi punctum, fugi fugitum dat.

El.

Ci.

Di.

Gi.

Ll

Ll fit sum : ut salli, stans pro sale condio salsum :  
 Dat pepuli pulsum, ceculi culsum, atque seselli  
 Falsum : dat velli vulsum, tuli habet quoque latum.

Mi, ni,  
 pi, qui.

Mi, ni, pi, qui, tum, fiunt : velut hic manifestum.  
 Emi, emptum, veni ventum, cecini à cano cantum,  
 A capio cepi dans captum, à capio cœprum,  
 A rumpo rupi ruptum, liqui quoque lictum,

Ri.

Ri fit sum, ut verri versum : pepererit excipe paritum.

Si.

Si fit sum, ut visi visum : tamen s geminato  
 Misi formabit missum : fulsi excipe fultum,  
 Hausi haustum, sarsi sartum, sarsi quoque fartum,  
 Ussi ustum, gessi gestum : torsi duo, tortum  
 Et torsum, indulsi indultum indulsumque requirit.

Pfi.

Pfi fit tum, ut scripsi scriptum : campsi excipe campsum.

Ti.

Ti fit tum, à sto namque steti, à sistoque stiti fit  
 Præterito, commune statum : verti excipe versum.

Vi.

Vi fit tum, ut flavi flatum : pavi excipe pastum :  
 Dat lavi lotum, interdum lautum atque lavatum :  
 Potavi potum, interdum facit & potatum :  
 Sed favi fautum, cavi cautum : à sero sevi  
 Formes rite satum : livi linique litum dat :  
 Solvi à solvo solutum, volvi à volvo volutum :  
 Vult singultivi singultum, veneo venis  
 Venivi venum, sepelivi ritè sepultum.

Ui.

Quod dat ui dat itum, ut domui domitum : excipe  
 Quodvis

Verbum in uo, quia semper ui formabit in utum :

Exui ut exutum : à ruo deme rui, ruitum dans.

Vult secui sectum, necui nectum, fricuique

\* Pes pro-  
 osculma-  
 ticus

Fricum, miscui item mistum, \* ac amicui dat amictum :

Torrui habet tostum, docui doctum, tenuique

Tentum, consului consultum, alui altum alitumque :

Sic salui saltum, colui ocului quoque cultum.

Pinsui habet pistum, rapui raptum : servuique

A sero vult ferrum, sic texui habet quoque textum.

Quædam  
 mutant ui  
 in lym.

Hæc sed ui mutant in sum : nam censeo censum,

Cellui habet celsum : mero messui habet quoque messum :

Nexui

Nexui item nexum, sic pexui habet quoque pexum :  
Dat patui passum, carui cassum caritumque.

Xi fit tum, ut viaxi vinctum, quinque abjiciunt n :  
Nam sinxi sictum, minxi mictum, inque supino  
Dat pinxi pictum, strinxi, rinxi quoque rictum.  
Xum, flexi, plexi, fixi dant ; & fluo fluxum.

De Compositorum verborum Supinis.

**C**ompositum ut simplex formatur quodque supinum,  
Quamvis non eadem stet semper syllaba utrique.  
Composita à tunsum, demptâ n tusum : à ruitum fit,  
I mediâ demptâ, rutum ; & à saltum quoque sultum.

A sero, quando satum format, compôsta situm dant.  
Hæc captum, factum, jactum, raptum, a per e mutant :  
Et cantum, partum, sparsum, carptum quoque fartum.

Verbum edo compositum, non estum, sed facit esum :  
Unum duntaxat comedo formabit utrumque.

A nosco tantum duo cognitum & agnitum habentur ;  
Cætera dant notum : nullo est jam noscitur in usu.

De Præteritis Verborum in Or.

**V**erba in or admittunt ex posteriore supino  
Præteritum, verso u per us, & sum consociato  
Vel fui : ut à lectu, lectus sum vel fui. At horum  
Nunc est deponens, nunc est commune notandum :  
Nam labor lapsus, patior dat passus, & ejus  
Nata : ut, compatior compassus, perpetiorque  
Formans perpeffus. Fateor quod fassus, & inde  
Nata : ut, confiteor confessus, diffiteorque  
Formans diffessus. Gradior dat gressus, & inde  
Nata : ut, digredior digressus. Funge fatiscor  
Fessus sum, mensus sum metior, utor & usus.  
Pro texo orditus, pro incepto dat ordior orsus,  
Nitor nisus vel nixus sum, ulciscor & ultus :  
Irascor simul iratus, reor atque ratus sum,  
Obliviscor vult oblitus sum : fuor optat

fructus,



**Tuor & Tuor.** *Fructus vel fructus, misereri iunge misertus. Vult tuor & tueor non tutus sed tuitus sum, Quamvis & tutum & tuitum fit utrique supinum; A loquor adde locutus, & à sequor adde secutus; Experior facit expertus: formare pacifcor*

**Apifcor.** *Gaudet pactus sum, nancifcor nactus: apifcor, Quod vetus est verbum, eptus sum: unde adipifcor adeptus. Funge queror questus, proficifcor iunge profectus; Expergifcor sum experrectus: & hæc quoque, comminifcor commentus, nascor natus, moriorque Mortuus, atque orior quod præteritum facit ortus.*

De verbis geminum præteritum habentibus, viz. Activæ & Passivæ vocis.

**P**æteritum activæ & passivæ vocis habent hæc;  
*Cæno cænavi & cænatus sum tibi format,*

**\* Versus hyper-metec.** *Furo juravi & juratus, potôque potavi \* Et potus, titubo titubavi vel titubatus: Sic careo carui & cassus sum, prandeo prandi Et pransus, pateo patui & passus, placeôque Dat placui & placitus, fuesco suevi atque suetus; Veneo pro vendor, venivi venditus & sum, Nubo nupsi nuptaque sum, mereor meritus sum Vel merui: adde libet libuit libitum; & licet adde Quod licuit licitum, tædet quod tæduit & dat Pertasum: adde pudet faciens puduit puditumque; Atque piget, tibi quod format piguit pigitumque.*

De Neutro-passivorum præteritis.

**N**eutro-passivum sic præteritum tibi format,  
**\* Versus hyper-metec.** *Gaudeo gavisus sum, fido fisis, & audeo \* Ausus sum, fio factus, soleo solitus sum, Mæreo sum mæstus: sed Phocæ nomen habetur.*

De verbis Præteritum mutuantes.

**Flavelco**  
**Brubelen**  
**Lucelen,**

**Q**uædam præteritum verba accipiunt aliunde:  
*Inceptivum in sco, stans pro primario, adoptas*

*Prætorf.*



*Præteritum ejusdem verbi : vult ergo tepesco*

*A tepeo tepui ; fervesco à fervéo servi ;*

*A video cerno vult vidi ; à concutio vult*

*Præteritum quatio concussi ; à percutioque*

*Percussi serio ; à mingo vult meo minxi ;*

*A sedeo fido vult sedi ; à suffero tollo*

*Sustuli ; & à suo sum fui, & à tulo ritè sero tuli ;*

*A sto sisto steti, tantum pro stare ; furóque*

*Insanivi, à verbo ejusdem significati :*

*Sic poscunt, vescor, medeor, liquor, reminiscor,*

*Præteritum à pascor, medicor, liquefio, recordor.*

Verfus  
hyper-  
metex.

## De Verbis Præterito carentibus.

**P***Præteritum fugiunt, vergo, ambigo, glisco, fatisco,*

*Polleo, nideo ! Ad hæc, inceptiva, ut pueroasco ;*

*Et passiva, quibus caruere activa supinis ;*

*Ut metuor, timeor : Meditativa omnia, præter*

*Parturio, esurjo, quæ præteritum duo servant.*

Silvesco,  
Fruti-  
cesco,  
Sterile  
sco.  
Deside-  
rativa ut  
Micturio,  
Scripturi-  
o, Iturio,  
Cacatu-  
rio.

## Verba Supinum rarò admittentia.

**H***Æc rarò aut nunquam retinebunt verba supinum,*

*Lambo, mico micui, rudo, scabo, parco peperci,*

*Dispesco, posco, disco, compesco, quinisco,*

*Dego, angó, sugo, lingo, ningo, satagóque,*

*Psallo, volo, nolo, malo, tremo, strideo, strido,*

*Flaveo, liveo, avert, paveo, comirveo, fervet :*

*A nuo compositum, ut renuo, à cado, ut incido ; præter*

*Occido, quod facit occasum, recidóque recasum ;*

*Respuo, linquo, luo, metuo, cluo, frigeo, calvo ;*

*Et sterto, timeo. Sic luceo, & arceo, cujus*

*Composita erciturum habent : Sic à gruo ut ingruo, natum :*

*Et quæcunque in ui formantur neutra secundæ :*

*Exceptis oleo, doleo, placeo, taceóque,*

*Pareo, item & careo, noceo, pæteo, lateóque,*

*Et valeo, caleo : gaudent hæc namque supino.*

## De Verbis Defectivis.

**S**ed nunc, ut totum percurras ordine verbum,  
 Istis pauca dabis mutilata & anomala verba:  
 Quia quia clauda quidem remanent, nec versibus apta,  
 Qui rectis pedibus plenisque incedere gaudent,  
 Hisce sequens dabitur, quem cernis, sermo solutus.

- Aio.** Præsens Indicativi, aio, ais, ait. *Plural.* aiunt.  
 Præteritum imperfectum, Aiebam, aiebas, aiebat.  
*Plur.* Aiebamus, aiebatis, aiebant. Imperativus. Ai.  
 Præsens Optativi, Potentialis, & Subjunctivi, Aias,  
 aiat. *Plural.* Aiamus, aiant. Præsens particip. Aiens.
- Ausim.** Præsens Optativi, & Subjunctivi, Ausim, ausis, ausit.  
*Plural.* Ausint.
- Salve.** Indicativus. Salvebis. Imper. Salve, salveto. *Plural.* Salvete, salvetote. Infinit. Salvete.
- Ave.** Imperativus. Ave, aveto. *Plur.* Avete, avetote. Infinit. Averere.
- Cedo.** Imperativus. Cedo; *Plural.* Cedite: id est, Dic, vel porrige; Dicite, vel porrigite.
- Faxo.** Futurum, Faxo vel faxim, faxis, faxit, pro faciam vel fecero. *Plural.* Faxint.
- Forem.** Imperfectum Optativus. Potent. & Subjunctivus. Forem, fores, foret; pro essem, esses, esset. *Plur.* Forent.  
 Infinitivus, Fore, id est, Futurum esse.
- Quæso.** Præsens Indicativus. Quæso. *Plural.* Quæsumus.
- Infit.** Infit, sola vox est, Dicit, seu dixit significans. *Plur.* Infunt, id est, Dicunt.
- Inquio.** Præsens Indicativus, Inquio vel inquiam, inquis, inquit.  
*Plural.* Inquimus, inquiunt.  
 Præterperfectum, Inquisti, inquit.  
 Futurum, Inquies, inquiet.  
 Imperativus. Inque apud Terentium. Inquito apud Plautum.  
 Præsens Optativi, Potentialis, & Subjunctivi, Inquia, Inquias, Inquias, Inquias.  
 Particip. Inquiens.
- Vale.** Indicativus. Valebis. Imper. Vale, valeto. *Plural.* Valet, valetote. Infinit. Valere.

Hæc quatuor sequentia, Odi, coepi, memini, novi, omnes voces præteriti perfecti & plusquam perfecti omnium modorum integras habent; ut & futuri quoque, quoties à præterito indicativi formatur: in reliquis magna ex parte deficiunt, nisi quòd Memini in Imperativo, *Sing.* Memento. *Plur.* Mementote habet. Odi, novi & coepi carent Imperativo.

Notabunt præterea pueri, Dor, furo, for, der, fer à for, simplicia non reperiri.

Præterea,	{	Dic,	pro	{	Dice,	}	Voces esse per A-	
		Duc,						Duce,
		Fer,						Fere,
		Fac,						Face,

pocopen concisas  
& decurtatas.

Denique notabunt, Eo & queo, habere imperfectum I bam, quibam: in futuro, Ibo, quibo.

## ¶ De verbis Impersonalibus.

ET de Personalibus quidem hætenus dictum esto; deinceps verò de Impersonalibus dicendum, quæ nominativum certæ personæ non recipiunt, sed mutatur nominativus personæ in obliquos: ut quod Anglicè impersonaliter dicimus, *I must read Virgil*, Latine impersonaliter effertur, *Oportet me legere Virgilium*.

Impersonalia igitur appellantur, non quòd personæ careant (habent enim, ut videmus, vocem tertiæ personæ tam activam quam passivam, quamplurima) sed quia nullius personæ aut numeri certam significationem, nisi ex adjuncto nominis vel pronominis casu obliquo, sortiantur: Nam *Oportet me*, primæ personæ esse videtur, numerique singularis: *Oportet nos*, primæ personæ pluralis: *Oportet te*, secundæ personæ singularis: *Oportet vos*, secundæ pluralis: atque itidem de reliquis.

Sunt igitur Impersonalia duplicia; activæ vocis & passivæ vocis.

Imper-  
sonalia  
vocis  
activæ.

Impersonalia activæ vocis sunt hæc & his similia:

Est,	Accidit,	Vacat,	Juvat,
Intéress,	Contingit,	Præstat,	Constat,
Refert,	Evenit,	Restat,	Conducit,
Placet,	Expedit,	Decet,	Miseret,
Libet,	Liquet,	Oportet,	Piget,
Pœnitet,	Licet,	Potest,	Pudet.
Tædet,	Solet,		

Denique nullum ferè verbum est tam personale, ut non idem impersonalis formam possit induere; nec è diverso. Horum tamen quædam personaliter usurpantur, ut, *Virtus placet probis. Pecunia omnia potest. Ars juvat egentes.*

Quædam verò semper manent impersonalia: ut, *Pudet, pœnitet, oportet.* Tametsi legere est apud Terentium: *Quæ adsolent, quæque oportent signa ad salutem esse, huic omnia adesse video.*

Conju-  
gantur  
in tertia  
persona.

Conjugantur autem in tertia persona singulari per omnes modos. A *Liquet*, non extat præteritum.

Tædet, pertæsum est format.

Miseret & miserefcit, misertum est.

Inveniun- tur etiam in usu,	Placitum est,	Placet.
	Libitum est,	Libet.
	Puditum est,	Pudet.
	Licitum est,	Licet.
	Pigitum est,	Piget.

Impersonalia passivæ vocis fiunt ab omnibus verbis activis & neutris: ut, *Curritur, turbatur.*

Impersonalia Supinis, & vocibus Gerundii carent.

### DE GERUNDIIS.

**G**erundia porro voces participiales vocari possunt, quòd similia participiis sunt: sicut proverbialia dicimus, quæ sunt similia proverbiiis.

Proinde quia parùm videbamus convenire inter Grammaticos, utrùm ad verba, an ad participia pro-

pius pertineant, hic in confinio utriusque partis relinquitur, ut utri velint, sese regno addicant.

Porrò à nomine casum, à verbo agendi vel patiendi, vel neutrius significationem accipiunt.

Et quia temporum nec discrimen discretis vocibus recipiunt, neque numeros aut personas admittunt, idè nec iusta verba esse possunt, nec participia.

Gerundii terminationes sunt tres.  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Di, Genitivi casus.} \\ \text{Do, Dativi \& Ablativi.} \\ \text{Dum, Nominativi \& Accusati.} \end{array} \right.$

Terminationes  
Gerundii.

Gerundia autem activè majore ex parte significare, nulli dubium est, licet interdum etiam passivè significant. Cujus rei exempla erunt ista: *Athenas quoque missus erudiendi causâ*: id est, ut erudiretur. *Utrique videndo Fœmina*: id est, dum videtur. *Satis ad cognoscendum illustria*: id est, ut cognoscantur. *Ars ad discendum facilis*: id est, ut discatur.

DE SUPINIS.

Supina quoque merito participialia verba dicuntur, <sup>Supina.</sup> **S**omniâque cum gerundii vocibus communia habent. Exeunt autem, prius in *um*, posterius in *u*: ut, *Visum, visu*. Significant autem, prius quidem ferè activè (sicut in rudimentis dictum est) posterius verò passivè.

DE PARTICIPIO.

**P**articipium est pars orationis inflexa casu; quæ à Participio. <sup>pium.</sup> Nomine, gênera, casus & declinationem; à Verbo, tempora & significationes; ab utroque numerum & figuram accipit.

ACCIDENTIA PARTICIPIO.

Accidunt Participio septem,  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Casus,} \\ \text{Genus,} \\ \text{Declinatio,} \\ \text{Tempus,} \end{array} \right. \left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Significatio,} \\ \text{Numerus,} \\ \text{Figura.} \end{array} \right.$

Accidentia participio.

De

# 60 PARTICIPIUM.

De genere autem, & casu, & declinatione, idem hic statuendum, quod suprà in nomine est traditum.

## TEMPUS.

Tempora  
particip.  
Præsens.  
Nota.

Tempora participiorum sunt quatuor.

Præsens in *ans* vel *ens*, ut, Amans, legens.

Cæterum iens, participium ab Eo, simplex rariùs legitur in nominativo; sed euntis, eunti, euntem, eunte, in obliquis: composita verò nominativum quidem in *iens* finitum habent, genitivum autem in *euntis*, ut, Abiens, abeuntis; Rediens, redeuntis: præter unum, Ambiens, ambientis.

Hanc formam sequuntur & horum gerundia: ut, Ab-eundi, abeundo, abeundum: præter Ambiendi, ambiendo, ambiendum.

Præteri-  
tum.

Præteritum verò in { Tus, } ut { Doctus,  
Sus, } Vilis,  
Xus, } Nexus.

Futu-  
rum.

Futurum autem duplex: Alterum quidem in *rus* activæ ut plurimum significationis, aut neutralis, ut, Lecturus, cursurus: Alterum verò in *rus*, passivæ significationis semper, ut Legendus.

## SIGNIFICATIO.

Signifi-  
catio  
activa.

Activè significant ea participia, quæ ab activis cadunt: ut, Docens, docturus; Verberans, verberaturus.

A neutris cadentia neutraliter significant: ut, Currrens, cursurus; Dolens, doliturus.

Participia in  
dus.  
Signifi-  
catio  
passiva.

A quibusdam neutris reperiuntur etiam participia in *dus*: ut, Dubitandus, vigilandus, carendus, dolendus.

Passivè significant, quæ à passivis descendunt: ut, Lectus, legendus; auditus, audiendus.

Fiunt & participia passiva ab huiusmodi neutris, quorum tertiæ personæ passivè usurpantur: ut, Aratur terra, hinc arata & aranda terra.

Participia

# PARTICIPIUM. 61

Participia formata à deponentibus, imitantur significationem suorum verborum : ut, Loquens, loquutus, loquutus, à loquor.

Participia à deponentibus.

Deponentibus, quæ olim communia fuerunt, manet participium futuri in *duo* : ut,

Sequendus, } { Utendus, } { Obliviscendus,  
Loquendus, } { Patiendus, } { & alia id genus.

Habent & deponentia præteriti temporis participia, quæ nunc activè, nunc passivè significant : ut,

Virgil. *Nunc oblita mihi tot carmina.*

Terent. *Meditata sunt mihi omnia mea incommoda.*

Virgil. — *mentitæque tela Agnoscunt.*

Communium denique verborum participia ipsorum significationem induunt : ut, Criminans, criminatus, criminaturus, criminandus.

Ab impersonalibus nulla extant participia, præter poenitens, decens, libens, pertæsus, poenitendus, pudendus.

Impersonalium participia.

Hæc participia, præter analogiam, à verbis suis deducuntur, Pariturus, nasciturus, sonaturus, arguiturus, luiturus, eruiturus, nesciturus, moriturus, oriturus, osurus, futurus.

Participia anomala deducta à verbis præter analogiam.

Similia participiis sunt ista, Tunicatus, togatus, personatus, larvatus, & innumera hujus fortis vocabula quæ à nominibus, non à verbis deducuntur.

Participia derivata à nominibus. Numerus.

## N U M E R U S.

Est & numerus in participiis, ut in nomine : Singularis, ut legens : Pluralis, ut Legentes.

## D E F I G U R A.

Figura est duplex : Simplex, ut Spirans : Composita, ut Respirans.

Figura participiorum. Participia sunt nomina.

Participia aliquando degenerant in nomina participalia : vel cùm aliun casum quàm suum verbum regunt : ut,

Abundans lactis, } { Patiens inedia,  
Alieni appetens, } { Fugitans litium.



## 62 PARTICIPIUM.

Vel cùm componuntur cum dictionibus, cum quibus ipsorum verba componi non possunt: ut, Infans, indoctus, innocens, ineptus.

Vel cùm comparantur: ut, { Amans } { Doctus, }  
 { Amantior, } { Doctior, }  
 { Amantissimus. } { Doctissimus. }

Vel cùm tempus significare desinunt: ut,

*Expectem qui me nunquam visurus abisti? hoc est, Qui eo animo discessisti, ut me amplius non videres.*

*Nullam mentionem fecit cometarum, nil prætermisurus, si quid explorati haberet: id est, ita affectus, ut non prætermitteret.*

*Amandus est doctissimus quisque: id est, dignus est, vel debet amari. Vita laudata: id est, laudabilis.*

*Ejicienda est hæc mollities animi: id est, debet ejici.*

Participia præsentis temporis fiunt nomina.

Participia præsentis temporis non raro fiunt substantiva nomina. Modò in masculino genere; ut, Oriens, occidens, profluens, confluent: Modò in foeminino: ut, Consonans, continens. Modò in neutro: ut, Contingens, accidens, antecedens, consequens: Modò in communi genere, pro verbalibus in *tor* vel *trix*: ut, Appetens, diligens, sitiens, indulgens.

Animans, modò foemininum, modò neutrum reperitur.

## ¶ DE ADVERBIO.

Adverb.

**A**dverbium est pars orationis non flexa: quæ adjecta verbo sensum ejus perficit atque explanat.

Explanat etiam interdum & nomen: ut, *Homo egregie impudens. Nè parum sis leno. Nimum philosophus. Aliquoties & Adverbium: ut, Parum honestè se gerit.*

### ACCIDENTIA ADVERBIO.

Adverbio accidentia.

Adverbio accidunt, Significatio, Comparatio, Species, Figura.

Significationis varietas ex verborum circumstantiis colligenda est.

# ADVERBIUM. 63

In loco significant, Hic, illic, istic, intus, foris, usquam, nusquam, ubi, ubique, ubicunque, ubilibet, utrobique, ubivis, ubi, ibi, alibi, alicubi, necubi, sicubi, inibi, ibidem, inferius, superius.

Locl.

Ad locum respiciunt, Huc, illuc, istuc, intrò, aliò, quò, aliquò, nequò, quoquò, siquò, eò, eòdem, quolibet, quòvis, quòcunque, foràs, hòrsùm, aliorùm, dextrorsùm, sinistrorsùm, sursum, deorsùm, utròque, neutrò, quòversum.

Ad locum significatia.

A loco denotant, Hinc, illinc, istinc, intus, foris, indè, undè, aliundè, alicunde, sicunde, necunde, indidem, undelibet, undevis, undecunque, supernè, infernè, coelitus, funditus.

A loco significatia.

Denique per locum, innuunt, Hàc, illàc, istàc, quacunque, eà, eàdem, alià, aliquà, siquà, nequà, quaquà.

Per locum significatia. Temporis adverbia.

Adverbia temporis sunt, Dum, quum, quando, aliquando, quamdiu, dudum, quamdudum, jamdudum, quampridem, jampridem, usque, quousque, toties, quoties, aliquoties, heri, hodie, cras, pridie, postridie, perendie, manè, vespèri, nudiustertius, nudiulquartus, nudiulquintus, nudiulsexus, &c. Diu, noctu, interdium, nunc, jam, nuper, aliàs, olim, item, pridem, tantisper, paulisper, parumper, sæpe, rarò, subinde, identidem, plerumque, quotidie, quotannis, nunquam, unquam, adhuc, etiam pro adhuc, hætenus, in dies, in horas, ut primùm, quum primùm, simulac, simulatque.

Usque temporis & loci adverbium est: ut, *Usque sub obscurum noctis. Ab Æthiopia est usque hæc. Est & ubi pro semper, aut continuè ponitur: ut, Usque metu micuere sinus.*

Usque

Adverbia numeri: ut, Semel, bis, ter, quater, quinquies, sexies, septies, vigesies, vel vices, trigesies, vel tricies, quadragies, quinquagies, sexagies, septuagies, octogies, centies, millies, infinities.

Numeri.

Ordinis sunt, Indè, deinde, hinc, dehinc, deinceps, novissimò, imprimis, postremò, primùm, jamprimum, denique, demum, tandem, ad summum.

Ordinis.

Adver-

- Interrogandi.** Adverbia Interrogandi sunt, Cur, quamobrem, quare, quomodo, ecquid, quin *pro* cur non, num, quid ita, quò, unde, quantum?
- Vocandi.** Vocandi sunt, Heus, ô, eho, & siqua sunt similia.
- Negandi.** Negandi: ut, Haud, non, minimè, nequaquam, ne *pro* non, & similia.
- Affirmandi.** Affirmandi: ut, Etiam, sic, quidni, sanè, prorsus, nempe, nimirum, certè, profectò, adeo, planè, scilicet.
- Jurandi.** Jurandi: ut, Hercle, mehercle, medius-fidius, Dius-fidius, Pol, ædèpol, Castor, ecastor.
- Hortandi.** Hortandi: ut, Agè, fodes, sultis, amabò, agedum, eho, dum, eia, agité.
- Prohibendi.** Prohibendi: ut, Nè, non.
- Optandi.** Optandi: ut, Utinam, si, ô si, ô.
- Excludendi.** Excludendi: ut, Modò, dummodo, tantummodo, solummodo, tantum, solum, duntaxat, demum.
- Congregandi.** Congregandi: ut, Simul, unà, pariter, populatim, universim, conjunctim, &c.
- Segregandi.** Segregandi: ut, Seorsim, gregatim, egregiè, nominatim, viritim, oppidatim, vicatim, privatim, speciatim, bifariam, trifariam, omnifariam, plurifariam, ostiatim.
- Diversitatis.** Diversitatis: ut, Aliter, secus.
- Eligendi.** Eligendi: ut, Potiùs, potissimùm, imò, satius.
- Intendendi.** Intendendi: ut, Valdè, nimis, nimium, immodicè, impendiò, impensè, prorsus, penitus, funditus, radicitus, omnino.
- Remittendi.** Remittendi: ut, Vix, ægrè, paulatim, sensim, pedetentim.
- Concedentis.** Concedentis: ut, Licèt, estò, demùs, sit-ita, sit-sanè.
- Negatæ solitudinis.** Negatæ solitudinis: ut, Non solum, non tantum, non modo, nedum.
- Qualitatis.** Qualitatis: ut, Doctè, pulchrè, fortiter, graviter.
- Quantitatis.** Quantitatis: ut, Parùm, minimè, maximè, summum, ad-summum, & similia.
- Comparandi.** Comparandi: ut, Tam, quàm, magis, minùs, maximè, minimè, æquè.

# CONJUNCTIO. 65

Rei non peractæ : ut, Ferme, ferè, propè, propemodum, tantum, tantum non, modò non.

Demonstrandì : ut, En, ecce, sic, ut cùm dicimus, *Sic scribo.*

Explanandi : ut, Id est, hoc est, quasi dicas, putà, ut puta, utpote.

Dubitandi : ut, Forfan, forsitan, fortassis, fortasse.

Eventus : ut, Fortè, casu, forte-fortunà.

Similitudinis : ut, Sic, sicut, sicuti, ita, item, itidem, tanquam, quasi, ceu, uti, velut, veluti.

## COMPARATIO.

Adverbia à nominibus adjectivis nata, & comparantur, & regunt casus comparativi & superlativi : ut, Doctè, doctius illo, doctissimè omnium : similiter Bene, melius, optimè, Malè, pejùs, pessimè : etiam Sæpe, sæpiùs, sæpissimè : Nuper, nuperrimè, & similia.

## SPECIES.

Species est duplex, Principalis, quæ ex se originem habet : ut *Heri, cras.*

Derivativa est eorum, quæ nata sunt aliunde : ut *Furim, à furor : Strictim, à stringo : Humaniter, ab humanus.*

Aliquando neutra adjectiva induunt formam adverbiorum, ad Græcorum imitationem : ut, Recens, pro recenser : Torvum, pro torvé.

## FIGURA.

Figura est duplex : simplex, ut Prudenter ; Composita, ut Imprudenter.

## DE CONJUNCTIONE.

Conjunctio est pars orationis, quæ sententiarum clausulas aptè connectit.

## ACCIDENTIA CONJUNCTIONI.

Conjunctioni accidunt, Figura, Potestas, & Ordo.

## FIGURA.

Rei non peractæ.

Demonstrandì.

Explanandi.

Dubitandi.

Eventus. Similitudinis.

Comparatio.

Species adverbiorum.

Nomina sunt adverb.

Accidentia Conjunctioni.

# 66 CONJUNCTIO.

## FIGURA.

**Figura.** Figura est duplex: Simplex, ut nam: Composita, ut namque.

## POTESTAS.

**Potestas.** Potestas, id est, significatio, est varia: Aliæ enim è conjunctionibus Copulativæ sunt: ut, Et, ac, que, atque, quoque, etiam, item, itidem, cùm, & tum.

**Tum.** Tum item geminatum: ut, *Vir tum probus, tum eruditus*. Huc spectant & his contrariæ: ut, Nec, neque, neu, neve.

**Suspensivæ.** Hæ quatuor sequentes, Et, que, nec, neque, cùm geminantur, Suspensivæ etiam vocantur, quòd aliud semper expectari faciant: ut, *Et fugit, & pugnat. Nec sapit ista, nec sentit.*

**Disjunct.** Aliæ Disjunctivæ: ut, Aut, vel, ve, seu, five. At istæ, cùm geminantur, Suspensivæ etiam vocantur: ut, *Vel scribit, vel dictat.*

**Discretivæ.** Aliæ Discretivæ: ut, Sed, sed-enim, at, ast, atqui, quidem, atque, quoque, scilicet, cæterum, verò, enim-verò, quòd si, verum, porrò, quin.

**Rational. seu Illativæ.** Aliæ Rationales, seu Illativæ: ut Ergò, ideò, igitur, itaque, idcirco, quare, quamobrem, quocirca, proinde, propterea, ob-eam-rem, ea-rè: Cicer. *Ea-rè statim ad te Aristocritum misi.*

**Causales.** Aliæ Causales, id est, quæ rationem præcedentis orationis inferunt: ut, Nam, namque, enim, etenim, quòd, quia, quippè, utpote, siquidem, quando, quandoquidem, propterea, quòd, quoniam, quatenus, & pro quia, ut Virgil. *Audieras & fama fuit: pro nam, vel quia fuit: quòd pro quia, ut Cicer. Non quòd quicquam desit, sed quia valde cupio.*

Ovid. *Crede mihi, bene qui latuit, bene vixit, & intra Fortunam debet quisque manere suam, pro nam vel quia.*

**Perfectivæ.** Aliæ Perfectivæ seu Absolutivæ: ut, Utì, quòd pro ut.

# CONJUNCTIO. 67

Nè & ut, pro nè non: Terent. *Sed patris vim ut queas ferre.*

Nè, pro ut non: Cicero, *Opera datur, judicia nè fiant.*

Aliæ Continuativæ: ut, Si, fin, ni, nisi.

Conti-  
nuat.

Aliæ Dubitativæ: ut, Nè, an, anne, num, nunquid, utrum, necne.

Dubitat.

Aliæ Adversativæ: ut, Et si, quamquam, quamvis, licet, tametsi: & aliæ id genus.

Adversat.

Aliæ Redditivæ earundem: ut, Tamen, attamen, sed tamen, veruntamen.

Reddit.

Aliæ Diminutivæ: ut, Saltem, at, certè, vel: ut Cic. *Nè vel latum digitum discesseris.*

Diminut.

Aliæ Electivæ: ut, Quam, ac, atque, ut, quando pro Quam accipiuntur.

Electiv.

Expletivæ: ut, Quidem, equidem, nimirum, autem, scilicet, quoque, nam, profecto, verò, enim-verò, sed-enim, enim pro certè.

Expletiv.

Virgil. *Nam quis te, juvenum confidentissime, nostras*

*Fussit adire domos? Ter. At enim non sinam.*

Sunt dictiones, quæ nunc adverbia, nunc conjunctiones, nunc præpositiones esse inveniuntur: ut Cum, quoties casui jungitur, præpositio est.

Cum.

In genere, Conjunctiones adeò tenui discrimine ab adverbis discernuntur, ut quàm sæpius confundantur: ut, Quando, proinde, & similia.

## O R D O.

Ordo conjunctionum est triplex, nempe,

Ordo

Præpositivus: earum scilicet, quæ in sententiarum exordio ponuntur.

con-

Subjunctivus: earum scilicet, quæ secundum in clausula, vel tertium, vel ad summum quartum locum occupant.

junct.

Præpo-

fit.

Subjunct.

Communis.

Com-

Ex conjunctionibus hæ imprimis præponi solent, Nam, quare, at, ast, atque, &, aut, vel, nec, neque, si, quin, quatenus, fin, seu, sive, ni, nisi.

munis.

Præpo-

fit.

Sub-

## 68 PRÆPOSITIO.

Subjun-  
ctivæ  
quæ  
Encliti-  
cæ.

Subjunctivæ verò sunt, *Quidem, quoque, autem, verò,* enim.

Et tres Encliticæ: ut, *Que, ne, ve*: sic dictæ, quòd ac-  
centum in præcedentem syllabam inclinant: ut,  
Horat. *Ludere qui nescit, campestribus abstinet armis*:  
*Indoctisque pilæ, discive, trochive quiescit.*

Sunt & aliæ quoque voces aliquot Encliticæ: ut,  
Dum, sis, nam, &c.

Com-  
munes.

Communes denique dicuntur, quæ indifferenter &  
præponi & postponi possunt, quales sunt reliquæ ferè  
omnes, præter prædictas: ut, *Equidem, ergo, igitur,*  
*saltem, tamen, quanquam, &c.*

## DE PRÆPOSITIONE.

**P**ræpositio est pars orationis indeclinabilis, quæ aliis  
orationis partibus, vel in Compositione, vel in Ap-  
positione præponitur.

Appositione: ut, *Christus sedet ad dextram Patris.*

Compositione: ut, *Adactum juramentum adhibendum*  
*admonuit.*

Præposi-  
tiones  
postpo-  
nitæ suis  
casibus.

Quædam præpositiones postponi suis casibus inveni-  
untur: ut,

Cum,	} ut {	Quibuscum.
Tenus,		Pube tenus.
Versus,		Angliam versus.
Usque,		Ad occidentem usque.

### ACCIDENTIA PRÆPOSITIONI.

Præpositioni accidit casuum regimen, sive constructio.

Cæterum in iisdem casibus mira est significationis va-  
rietas, quæ non tam regulis, quàm assiduò legendi at-  
que scribendi usu discenda est. Exempli causa.

Secun-  
dum.

Secundum, aliud significat cum dico, *Secundum aurem*  
*vultus accepit*, id est, *juxta aurem*. Aliud verò hic, *Secun-*  
*dum Deum parentes amandi sunt*, id est, *proximè post De-*  
*um*: Aliud in hac oratione, *Secundum quietem satis mihi*  
*felix visus sum*, id est, *in quiete, vel inter quietem.*

Præpo-



Præpositiones Accusativum regentes.

Ex præpositionibus istæ accusat. casui adiunguntur.

Ad. *Ad Calendas Græcas.*

Apud. Virg. *At bene apud memores veteris stat gratia sacæ.*

Ante. Hor. — *dicique beatus*

*Ante obitum nemo, supremæque funera debet.*

Adversus. *Ne Hercules quidem adversus duos.*

Cis. *Cis Thamesim sita est Ætonia.*

Citra. { Hor. *Est modus in rebus, sunt certi denique fines,*

Ultra. { *Quos ultra citràque nequit consistere rectum.*

Intra. Ovid. *Crede mihi, bene qui latuit, bene vixit, & intra*

*Fortunam debet quisque manere suam.*

Extra. Plin. Ma. *Extra omnem ingenii aleam positus Cicero.*

Circum. locale est: ut, *Circum montem.*

Circa. *Circa forum. Circa viginti annos.*

Circiter, tempus & numerum significat: ut,

*Circiter horam decimam.*

*Cæsar; Circiter duo millia desiderati sunt.*

Contra. *Nè contra stimulum calces.*

Erga. *Princeps erga populum clemens.*

Inter. Hor. *Multa cadunt inter calicem supremæque labra.*

Infra. Terent. *Quem ego infra omnes, infimum esse puto.*

Supra. Salust. *Dux hostium cum exercitu supra caput est;*

Juxta. Ter. *Cum lucubrando juxta ancillas lanam faceres.*

Ob. *Fæda mors ob oculos versabatur.*

Per. Hor. *Impiger extremos currit mercator ad Indos,*  
*Per mare pauperiem fugiens, per saxa, per ignes.*

Prope. *Prope urbem. Prope mortem.*

Præter. Terent. *Ita fugias, nè præter casam.*

Propter. *Aliquid mali propter vicinum malum.*

Post. Hor. *O cives, cives, quærenda pecunia primum est;*  
*Virtus post nummos.*

Penes. Ovid. *Me penes est unum vasti custodia mundi.*

Trans. Hor. *Cælum, non animum nigrant, qui trans mare*  
*currunt.*

Præpo-

# 70 PRÆPOSITIO.

## Præpositiones Ablativum regentes.

- A.** Terent. *A me nulla tibi orta est injuria.*  
**Ab.** Hæc vocalibus præponitur, Mimus. *Ab aliis expectes, alteri quod feceris.*  
**Abs.** Terent. *Abs quovis homine beneficium accipere, cum opus est, gaudeas.*  
**Absque.** Terent. *Absque eo esset. Absque pecunia misere vivitur.*  
**Cum.** Mimus. *Damnum appellandum est, cum mala fama*  
**Clam.** *Clam patre.* Et Plautus. *Clam patrem.* (lucrum.  
**Coram.** *Coram Senatu res acta est.*  
**De.** *Sophistæ rixantur de lana caprina.*  
**E.** *Qui falsum testimonium dixisse convictus erat, è saxo Tarpeio dejiciebatur.*  
**Ex.** *Ex malis moribus bonæ leges natæ sunt.*  
**Pro.** Mimus. *Comes facundus in via pro vehiculo est.*  
**Præ.** Terent. *Huic aliquid præ manu dederis.*  
**Sine.** Idem. *Sine Cerere & Baccho friget Venus.*  
**Tenus.** Virg.—*capuloque tenuis ferrum impulit ira.*

## Præpositiones utrique casui servientes.

Hæ quatuor utrumque casum exigunt sed diversâ fere significatione.

**In.** Terent. *In tempore veni, quod omnium rerum est primum: sine motu.*

**Ovidius.** *Inque domos superas scandere cura fuit: motum quodammodo innuit.*

**Sub.** Vir. *Sub lucem expertant calathis: i.e. paulò ante lucem.*  
 Idem.—*casto vidisse sub antro.*

**Super.** Virg. *Super ripas Tiberis. Fronde super viridi.*

**Subter.** *Subter terram.* Virg. *Densa subter testudine casus:*  
 Sunt & Præpositiones, quæ nunquam extra compositionem inveniuntur: nimirum,

Præpositiones nunquam extra compositionem repertæ.

Am,	{ ut	Ambio:	{	Re,	{ ut	Recipio:
Di,		Diduco:		Se,		Sepono:
Dis,		Distraho:		Con,		Condo.

Con-

# INTERJECTIO. 71

Con verò, quoties cum dictione à vocali incipiente componitur, amittit *n* : ut, Coagmento, coemo, coinquino, cooperio.

## DE INTERJECTIONE.

**I**nterjectio est pars orationis, quæ sub incondita voce subito prorumpentem animi affectum demonstrat.

Tot autem sunt interjectionum significationes, quot animi perturbati sunt motus.

Exultantis, ut, Evax, vah. Plaut. *Evax, iurgio tandem uxorem abegi.*

Dolentis, ut, Heu, hoi, hei, ô, ah. Terent. *I intro, hei, hei.* Virg. *O dolor atque decus magnum!*

Timentis, ut, Hei, atat. Terent. *Hei, vereor ne quid Andria apportet mali.*

Admirantis : ut, Papæ. Ter. *Papæ, nova figura oris.*

Vitantis : ut, Apage, Apagésis. Terent. *Apagésis, egon, formidolosus?*

Laudantis : ut Euge. Mar. *Citò, nequiter, euge beate.*

Vocantis : ut, Eho, ho, io, Terent. *Oh, qui vocaris?*

Deridentis : ut, Hui. Ter. *Hui, tu mihi illam laudas?*

Ex improvilo aliquid deprehendentis : ut, Atat, Ter. *Atat, data hercle mihi sunt verba.*

Exclamantis : ut, Oh, proh. *Proh nefas.* Seneca. *Oh paupertas felix!*

Imprecantis : ut, Malum, væ malum. Ter. *Quid hoc (malum) infelicitatis est?*

Ridentis : ut, Ha, ha, he. Terent. *Ha, ha, he, desessa jam misera sum te ridendo.*

Silentium injungentis : ut, Au. Terent. *Au, ne comparandus hic quidem ad illum est.*

Illud hic observandum est, nomina quoque & verba quandoq; interjectionis loco poni: ut apud Virgil. *Nativibus (infandum) amissis.* Cicer. *Sed amabo te cura.* Imò quævis orationis pars, affectum animi inconditum significans, interjectionis vice fungitur.

Aliæ partes sunt interjectionis,

Aliquæ

Atque hæc quidem de octo orationis partium Etymologia, quamlibet crassâ (quod aiunt) Minervâ tradita sunt pueris, tantisper dum ordinariis in ludo operis ac pensis sub ferula defunguntur, abundè sufficere arbitramur. Quod si cui tamen allubescit quicquàm his altius exactiusque peruestigare, hunc ad Grammaticorum voluenda perscrutandaque opera relegandum censemus. Quorum cum magnus sit numerus, & quidem egregie doctorum, nullum tamen novimus, qui vel propter eruditonem ac doctrinæ præstantiam, vel propter præcipiendi claritatem elegantiamque, Linacro nostro comparari posse videatur, nedum præponi.

## DE CONSTRUCTIONE octo partium orationis.

**A**Tque de octo quidem orationis partibus earumque formis, quatenus ad Etymologiam attinet, hætenus dictum esto: deinceps de eisdem, quatenus ad Syntaxim, quæ constructio dicitur, agemus.

Con-  
structio  
quid sit.

Est igitur Syntaxis debita partium orationis inter se compositio connexioque, juxta rectam Grammatices rationem.

Ea verò est, quâ veterum probatissimi, tum in scribendo, tum in loquendo, sunt usi.

Concor-  
dantiæ  
Gram-  
maticæ.

Cæterum, priusquam de partium orationis structura singulatim pertractemus, quædam in genere de tribus Grammaticæ concordantiis sunt paucis edisserenda.

## ¶ CONCORDANTIA Nominativi & Verbi.

Concor-  
dantiæ  
prima.

**V**erbum personale coheret cum nominativo numero & personâ: ut,

*Nunquam sera<sup>b</sup> est ad bonos mores<sup>a</sup> via.*

*<sup>a</sup>Fortuna nunquam perpetuo<sup>b</sup> est bona.*

Nomi-

Nominativus primæ vel secundæ personæ rarissimè exprimitur, nisi causâ discretionis; ut, <sup>a</sup> *Vos* <sup>b</sup> *damnastis*; quasi dicat, præterea nemo: aut emphasis gratiâ, ut Ter. <sup>a</sup> *Tu* <sup>b</sup> *es patronus*, <sup>a</sup> *tu pater*, si <sup>b</sup> *deseris* <sup>a</sup> *tu*, *perimus*; quasi dicat, præcipue, & præ aliis tu patronus es. Ovid. <sup>a</sup> *Tu dominus*, <sup>a</sup> *Tu vir*, <sup>a</sup> *tu mihi frater* <sup>b</sup> *eris*.

In verbis, quorum significatio ad homines tantum pertinet, tertiæ personæ nominativus sæpe subauditur; ut, Est, fertur, dicunt, ferunt, aiunt, prædicant, clamitant, & in similibus: ut,

Terentius. <sup>b</sup> *Fertur atrocia flagitia designasse*.

Ovid. *Tæque* <sup>b</sup> *ferunt iræ penitusse tuæ*.

Non semper vox casualis est verbo nominativus, sed aliquando verbum infinitum; ut Plaut. <sup>a</sup> *Mentiri non* <sup>b</sup> *est meum*: Aliquando oratio; ut,

Ovid. *Adde quod* <sup>a</sup> *ingenuas didicisse fideliter artes*

<sup>b</sup> *Emollit mores, nec finit esse feros*.

Aliquando adverbium cum genitivo; ut, <sup>a</sup> *Partim virorum* <sup>b</sup> *ceciderunt in bello*. <sup>a</sup> *Partim signorum* <sup>b</sup> *sunt combusta*.

Verbum  
infinitum  
nominati-  
vus ver-  
bo.

## EXCEPTIO PRIMA.

Verba infiniti modi pro nominativo accusativum ante se statuunt; ut, <sup>a</sup> *Te* <sup>b</sup> *rediisse incolumem gaudeo*. <sup>a</sup> *Te fabulam* <sup>b</sup> *agere, volo*.

Accusa-  
tivus ante  
ver-  
bum in-  
finit.

Resolvi potest hic modus per quod & ut, ad hunc modum; <sup>a</sup> *Quod tu* <sup>b</sup> *rediisti incolumis, gaudeo*. <sup>a</sup> *Ut tu fabulam* <sup>b</sup> *agas, volo*.

Verbum inter duos nominativos diversorum numerorum positum, cum alterutro convenire potest; ut, Terent. *Amantium iræ amoris* <sup>a</sup> *redintegratio* <sup>b</sup> *est*.

Ovid. —quid enim nisi <sup>a</sup> *vota* <sup>b</sup> *superfuit?*

Idem. *Pectora percussit, pectus quoque* <sup>a</sup> *robora* <sup>b</sup> *fium*.

Virgilius —nihil hic nisi <sup>a</sup> *carmina* <sup>b</sup> *desunt*.

Impersonalia præcedentem nominativum non habent; ut, *Tædet me vita*. *Pertasum est conjugii*: de quibus suo loco.

Exceptio.

Nomen multitudinis singulare quandoq; verbo plurali jungitur : ut, <sup>a</sup> *Ears* <sup>b</sup> *abiere.* <sup>a</sup> *Uterque* <sup>b</sup> *deluduntur dolis.*

## ¶ CONCORDANTIA

*Substantivi & Adjectivi.*

Secunda  
concor-  
dantia.

**A**djectivum cum substantivo genere, numero & casu consentit : ut, *Juven.* <sup>b</sup> *Rara* <sup>a</sup> *avis in terris,* <sup>b</sup> *nigróque simillima* <sup>a</sup> *cygno.*

Ad eundem modum participia & pronomina substantivis adnectuntur : ut,

*Ovidius. Donec eris felix multos numerabis amicos ;*

*Nullus ad* <sup>b</sup> *amissas ibit amicus* <sup>a</sup> *opes.*

*Seneca. Non* <sup>b</sup> *hoc primum* <sup>a</sup> *pectora* <sup>a</sup> *vulnus* <sup>b</sup> *mea senserunt ; graviora tuli.*

Nota.

Aliquando oratio supplet locum substantivi : ut, <sup>b</sup> *Augusto* <sup>a</sup> *regem Doroberniam proficisci.*

## ¶ CONCORDANTIA

*Relativi & Antecedentis.*

Tertia  
concor-  
dantia.

**R**elativum cum antecedente concordat genere, numero, & personâ : ut, — <sup>a</sup> *vir bonus est quis ?* <sup>b</sup> *Qui consulta patrum,* <sup>b</sup> *qui leges jurâque servat.*

Nec unica vox solum, sed interdum etiam oratio ponitur pro antecedente : ut, *Terent.* <sup>a</sup> *In tempore ad eam veni* <sup>b</sup> *quod omnium rerum est primum.*

Relativum inter duo antecedentia diversorum generum collocatum, nunc cum priore convenit ; ut, *Valerius Maximus, Senatus assiduam stationem eo* <sup>a</sup> *loci peragebat,* <sup>b</sup> *qui hodie Senaculum appellatur.*

*Non procul ab eo* <sup>a</sup> *flumine,* <sup>b</sup> *quod Saliam vocant.*

*Cicer. Propius à terra Fovis* <sup>a</sup> *stella fertur* <sup>b</sup> *quæ Phæton dicitur.*

Nunc cum posteriore : ut, *Homines tuentur illum globum,* <sup>b</sup> *quæ* <sup>a</sup> *terra dicitur.*

*Est locus in carcere,* <sup>b</sup> *quod* <sup>a</sup> *Tullianum appellatur.*

*In coitu Luna,* <sup>b</sup> *quod* <sup>a</sup> *inierlunium vocant.*

Ali



Aliquando relativum, aliquando & nomen adjectivum respondet primitivo, quod in possessivo subintelligitur: Terentius. *Omnes omnia bona dicere, & laudare fortunas a meas, b qui filium haberem tali ingenio præditum.* Ovid. — *a nostros vidisti b flentis ocellos.*

Quoties nullus nominativus interferitur inter relativum & verbum, relativum erit verbo nominativus: *Casus* ut, Boët. *Felix, a qui b potuit boni Fontem visere lucidum.* *relativi*

At si nominativus relativo & verbo interponatur, relativum regitur à verbo, aut ab alia dictione, quæ cum verbo in oratione locatur: ut Ovid. *Gratia ab officio, b quod mora a tardat, abest.* Virg. *b Cujus a numen adoro. b Quorum a optimum ego habeo. b Cui a similem non vidi. b Quo a dignum te judicavi. b Quo a melius nemo scribit. b Quem a videndo obstupuit. Lego Virgilium præ b quo ceteri a poeta sordent.*

### Substantivorum constructio.

Quum duo substantiva diversæ significationis sic concurrunt, ut posterius à priore possideri quodammodo videatur, tum posterius in genitivo ponitur, ut, Juv. *Crescit a amor b nummi quantum ipsa pecunia crescit.* *Genitivus substantivi* *Rex a pater b patriæ. a Arma b Achillis. a Cultor b agri.*

Proinde hic genitivus sæpius in adjectivum possessivum mutatur: ut, *b Patris a domus, b Paterna a domus, b Heri a filius, b Herilis a filius.* Est etiam ubi in dativum vertitur: ut, Luc. de Cat. *b Urbi a pater est, b urbi que a maritus. a Herus b tibi, b mibi a pater.* *Variatio substantivi in adjectivum possessivum.*

### EXCEPTIO.

Excipiuntur quæ in eodem casu per appositionem connectuntur: ut Ovid. *Effodiuntur a opes b irritamenta malorum.* Virg. *Ignavum a fucos b pecus a præsepibus arcent.* *Appositi.*

Adjectivum in neutro genere absolutè, hoc est, absque substantivo positum, aliquando genitivum postulat: ut, *a Paululum b pecuniæ. a Hoc b noñis.* Catul. *Ne rvidemus a id b manticæ, quod in tergo est.*



Juvenal. <sup>a</sup> *Quantum quisque sua* <sup>b</sup> *nummorum servat in arca,* <sup>a</sup> *Tantum habet* & <sup>b</sup> *fidei.*

Ponitur interdum genitivus tantum, nempe priore substantivo per Eclipsim subaudito; ut in hujusmodi locutionibus;

Terentius. *Ubi ad* <sup>b</sup> *Dianæ veneris, ito ad dextram. Ventum erat ad* <sup>b</sup> *Vestæ:* Utrobique subauditur <sup>a</sup> *templum.*  
Virg. <sup>b</sup> *Hæctoris Andromache:* subauditur <sup>a</sup> *uxor.* Idem;  
Deiphobe <sup>b</sup> *Glauçi:* subauditur <sup>a</sup> *filia.* Terent. <sup>b</sup> *Hujus video Byrrhiam:* subaudi <sup>a</sup> *servum.*

#### LAUS ET VITUPERIUM.

Laus & vituperium rei variis modis effertur, at frequentius in ablativo, vel genitivo; ut, <sup>a</sup> *Vir* <sup>b</sup> *nullæ fide.* Ovid. <sup>b</sup> *Ingenui vultus* <sup>a</sup> *puer, ingenuique pudoris.*

#### OPUS ET USUS.

Opus & usus ablativum exigunt; ut Cicero. <sup>b</sup> *Autho-ritate tuâ nobis* <sup>a</sup> *opus est.* Gellius. *Pecuniam* <sup>b</sup> *qua sibi nihil esset* <sup>a</sup> *usus, ab iis quibus sciret usum esse non accepit.*

Opus  
adjecti-  
væ.

Opus autem adjectivè pro necessarius quandoque poni videtur, varièque construuntur; ut,

Cicero. *Dux* <sup>b</sup> *nobis* & *author* <sup>a</sup> *opus est.*

Idè; *Dicis nummos* <sup>b</sup> *mihi* <sup>a</sup> *opus esse ad apparatus triumphi*  
Terentius. *Alia* <sup>b</sup> *quæ* <sup>a</sup> *opus sunt para.*

Cicero. *Sulpitii operam intelligo ex tuis literis,* <sup>b</sup> *tibi multam* <sup>a</sup> *opus non fuisse.*

### Adjectivorum Constructio.

#### GENITIVUS.

Adjecti-  
vorum  
constru-  
tio.

**A**djectiva, quæ desiderium, notitiam, memoriam, atque iis contraria significant, genitivum adsciscunt; ut,

Plinius. *Est natura hominum* <sup>b</sup> *novitatis* <sup>a</sup> *avida.*

Virg. *Mens* <sup>b</sup> *futuri* <sup>a</sup> *præscia.* Idè; *Memor esto brevis* <sup>b</sup> *ævi.*

Ter. <sup>a</sup> *Imperitos* <sup>b</sup> *rerum, eductos liberè, in fraudem illicis.*

Silius. *Non sum* <sup>b</sup> *animi* <sup>a</sup> *dubius, sed* <sup>a</sup> *devius* <sup>b</sup> *aqui.*

Cicero. *Grægarum* <sup>b</sup> *literarum* <sup>a</sup> *rudis.*

Adjectiva

Adjectiva verbalia in *ax* etiam in genitivum feruntur; ut, <sup>a</sup> *Audax* <sup>b</sup> *ingenii*. Ovid. *Tempus* <sup>a</sup> *odax* <sup>b</sup> *rerum*. Sen. *Virtus est* <sup>b</sup> *vitiorum* <sup>a</sup> *fugax*. Hor. <sup>b</sup> *Utrilium* <sup>a</sup> *sagax*. Idem; <sup>b</sup> *Propositi* <sup>a</sup> *tenax*. Virg. *Tam* <sup>b</sup> *ficti pravi* <sup>a</sup> *tenax*, *quàm nuncia veri*. Plaut. <sup>b</sup> *Pecuniarum* <sup>a</sup> *petax*, &c.

Verbalia  
in *ax*.

Ingens præterea adjectivorum turba nullis certis regulis obstricta, casum patrium postulat. Quorum faraginem satis quidem amplam congesseerunt Linacrus & Despauteius. Tu vero crebrâ lectione ea tibi reddes admodum familiaria.

Nomina partitiva, aut partitivè posita, interrogativa quædam, & certa numeralia, genitivo, à quo & genus mutantur, gaudent; ut Cicero, *Quamquam te, Marce fili, annum jam audientem Cratippum, idque Athenis, abundare oportet præceptis institutisque philosophia, propter summam & doctoris auctoritatem & urbis*; <sup>b</sup> *quorum* <sup>a</sup> *alter te scientiâ augere potest, altera exemplis*.

<sup>a</sup> *Utrum* <sup>b</sup> *horum major accipe*.

Ovid. <sup>a</sup> *quisquis fuit ille* <sup>b</sup> *Deorum*.

Terent. *An* <sup>a</sup> *quisquam* <sup>b</sup> *hominum est aequè miser, ut ego*;  
Virgilius—<sup>b</sup> *divum promittere* <sup>a</sup> *nemo Auderet*.

<sup>a</sup> *Tres* <sup>b</sup> *fratrum*. <sup>a</sup> *Quatuor* <sup>b</sup> *judicum*. <sup>b</sup> *Sapientum* <sup>a</sup> *octa*;  
*vix quis fuerit, nondum constat*.

<sup>a</sup> *Primus* <sup>b</sup> *regum Romanorum fuit Romulus*.

In alio tamen sensu ablativum exigunt cum præpositi-  
one; ut; <sup>a</sup> *Primus* <sup>b</sup> *ab Hercule*. <sup>a</sup> *Tertius* <sup>b</sup> *ab Ænea*.

In alio vero sensu dativum; ut Virg.—<sup>b</sup> *Nulli pietate*  
<sup>a</sup> *secundus*.

Usurpantur autem & cum his præpositionibus, *E*, *de*,  
*ex*, *inter*, *ante*; ut Ovid. *Est deus* <sup>b</sup> *è vobis* <sup>a</sup> *alter*.

Idem. <sup>a</sup> *Solus* <sup>b</sup> *de superis*. Virg. <sup>a</sup> *Primus* <sup>b</sup> *inter omnes*.

Idem. <sup>a</sup> *Primus* <sup>b</sup> *ibi* <sup>a</sup> *ante omnes, magnâ comitante catervâ*,

*Laocoon ardens summa decurrit ab arce*.

Interrogativum & ejus redditivum ejusdem casus & Interro-  
gationis erunt; ut <sup>a</sup> *Quarum rerum nulla est satietas* &c.

<sup>b</sup> *Divitiarum*. *Quid rerum nunc* <sup>a</sup> *geritur in Angliâ*;

<sup>b</sup> *Consulitur de religione*.

Fallit hæc regula, quoties interrogatio fit per Cujus, jam : ut <sup>a</sup> *Cujus pecus?* <sup>b</sup> *Laniorum.* Aut per dictionem variæ Syntaxeos : ut, <sup>a</sup> *Furtive accusas, an homicidii?* <sup>b</sup> *Utroque.*

Fallit denique cum per possessiva, Meus, tuus, suus, &c. respondendum est : ut, <sup>a</sup> *Cujus est hic codex?* <sup>b</sup> *Meus.*

Compara-  
rativa,  
& super-  
lativa.

Comparativa & superlativa, accepta partitivè, genitivum, unde & genus sortiuntur, exigunt.

Comparativum autem ad duo, superlativum ad plura refertur : ut, <sup>b</sup> *Manuum* <sup>a</sup> *fortior est dextra.* <sup>b</sup> *Digitorum medius est* <sup>a</sup> *longissimus.* Accipiuntur autem partitivè, cum per E, ex, aut inter exponuntur : ut, *Virgilius* <sup>b</sup> *Poetarum* <sup>a</sup> *doctissimus* : id est, <sup>b</sup> *ex poetis,* vel <sup>b</sup> *inter poetas.*

Compara-  
tivo-  
rum  
Const.

Comparativa cum exponuntur per quàm ablativum adsciscunt : ut, Horat. <sup>a</sup> *Vilius argentum est* <sup>b</sup> *auro,* <sup>b</sup> *virtutibus aurum,* id est, *quàm aurum, quàm virtutes.* Adsciscunt & alterum ablativum, qui mensuram excessus significat ; ut,

Cicer. <sup>b</sup> *Quanto* <sup>a</sup> *doctior es,* <sup>b</sup> *tanto te geras* <sup>a</sup> *submissius.*

Tanto, quanto, multo, longè, ætate, natu, utrique gradui apponuntur, ut Catul. <sup>b</sup> *Tanto* <sup>a</sup> *peffimus omnium poeta,* <sup>b</sup> *Quanto tu* <sup>a</sup> *optimus omnium patronus.*

Erat. Nocturnæ lucubrationes <sup>b</sup> *longè* <sup>a</sup> *periculosissimæ habentur,* <sup>b</sup> *Longè cæteris* <sup>a</sup> *peritior es,* sed non <sup>b</sup> *multo* <sup>a</sup> *melior tamen.* Juvén. Omne animi vitium <sup>b</sup> *tanto* <sup>a</sup> *conspicuius in se crimen habet,* <sup>b</sup> *quanto* <sup>a</sup> *major, qui peccat habetur.* <sup>a</sup> *Major* & <sup>a</sup> *maximus* <sup>b</sup> *ætate.* <sup>a</sup> *Major* & <sup>a</sup> *maximus* <sup>b</sup> *natu.*

#### D A T I V U S.

Comin-  
gum in-  
commo-  
dam, &c.

Adjectiva quibus commodum, incommodum, similitudo, dissimilitudo, voluptas, submissio, aut relatio ad aliquid significatur, in dativum transeunt : ut Virgilius, *Sis* <sup>a</sup> *bonus,* O, <sup>a</sup> *felixque* <sup>b</sup> *tuis.*

Martial. Turba <sup>b</sup> *gravis* <sup>a</sup> *paci placidæq;* <sup>a</sup> *inimica* <sup>b</sup> *quieti.* Est <sup>a</sup> *finitimus* <sup>b</sup> *oratori poeta.* Ovid. Qui color albus erat, nunc est <sup>a</sup> *contrarius* <sup>b</sup> *albo.*

Martial. <sup>a</sup> *Fucupdus* <sup>b</sup> *amicis,* <sup>b</sup> *Omnibus* <sup>a</sup> *supplex.*

Horat.

Horat. *Si facis ut b patria sit a idoneum, a nullis b agro.*

Huc referuntur nomina ex Con præpositione composita: ut Contubernalis, commilito, conservus, cognatus, &c.

Composita cum Con.

Quædam ex his quæ similitudinem significant, etiam genitivo gaudent: ut,

Lucanus. *Quem metuis, a par b hujus erat.*

Varia constructio.

Terentius. *Patres æquum esse censent, nos jamjam a pueris illico nasci senes, neque illarum a affines esse b rerum quos fert adolescentia.*

Idem. *b Domini a similis es. Auson. Mens a conscia b recti.*

Virgilius. *Præterea regina b tui a fidissima, dextrâ Occidit ipsa suâ.*

Communis, alienus, immunis, variis casibus serviunt:

ut Cicero. *a Commune b animantium omnium est conjunctionis appetitus, procreandi causâ. Mors b omnibus a communis. Hoc b mihi tecum a commune est.*

Communis, alienus, immunis, variis casibus serv.

Sallust. *Non a aliena b consilii. Sen. a Alienus b ambitioni.*

Cicero. *Non a alienus b a Scævola studiis.*

Ovid. *Vobis a immunibus hujus Esse b mali dabitur.*

Plinius. *Caprificus b omnibus a immunis est.*

*a Immunes b ab illis malis sumus.*

Natus, commodus, incommodus, utilis, inutilis, vehementes, aptus, interdum etiam accusativo cum præpositione adjunguntur: ut Cic. *a Natus b ad gloriam.*

Verbalia in bilis accepta passivè, ut & participia, seu potius participialia in dus, dativo adjecto gaudent: ut

In bilis & dus.

Mar. *O b mihi post nullos Fuli a memorande sodales,*

Statius.—*nulli a penetrabilis b astro Lucus erat.*

## ACCUSATIVUS.

Magnitudinis mensura subjicitur adjectivis in accusativo: ut, *Gnomen septem b pedes a longus, umbram nan amplius quatuor b pedes a longam reddit.*

Magnis. mensura.

Interdum & in Ablativo: ut,

Columella. *Fons a latus b pedibus tribus, a altus b triginta.*

Inter-

Interdum etiam & genitivo; ut Columel. *In movem borti areas, a latos b pedum densim, a longas b pedum quinquagenum factio.*

## A B L A T I V U S.

Copia &  
inopia.

Adjectiva, quæ ad copiam egestatemve pertinent, interdum ablativo, interdum & genitivo gaudent; ut Plaut. *Amor & b melle & felle est a facundissimus.* Horat. *a Dives b agris, a dives positus in senore b nummis.* Virgilius. *At fessæ multa referunt se nocte minores, Crura b thymo a plena.*

Idem. *Quæ regio in terris nostri non a plena b laboris?*

Idem. *a Dives b opum, a dives pictai b vestis, & auri.*

Persius. *O curvæ in terras anima, & b caelestium a inanes!*

*a Experts b fraudis. b Gratiâ a beatus.*

Diversi-  
tas.

Nomina diversitatis ablativum sibi cum præpositione subiiciunt; ut, Virg. *a Alter b ab illo. a Aliud b ab hoc. a Diversus b ab isto.*

Causa.

Nonnunquam etiam dativum; ut, *b Huic a diversum.* Adjectiva regunt ablativum significantem causam; ut, *a Pallidus b irâ. a Incurvus b senectute. a Livida b armis brachia. a Trepidus b morte futurâ.*

Modus  
rei.

Forma vel modus rei adjicitur nominibus in ablativo; ut, *Facies miris b modis a pallida. b Nomine a Grammaticus, b re a barbarus.*

Cicero. *Sum tibi b naturâ a parens, a præceptor b consiliis.*

Virgilius. *a Trojanus b origine Cæsar. b Spe a dives, b re*

*a pauper. a Syrus b natione.*

Dignus,  
&c.

Dignus, indignus, præditus, captus, contentus, extorris auferendi casum adjectum volunt; ut,

Terent. *a Dignus es b odio. Qui filium haberem tali b ingenio a præditum.* Virg. *Atque b oculis a capiti fodere cubili talpæ.* Idem. *b Sorte tuâ a contentus abi.*

Horum nonnulla genitivum interdum vendicant; ut

Ovid. *Militia est b operis altera a digna tui.*

Virgilius. *Descendam magnorum haudquaquam a indig-  
nus bavorum.*

## ¶ Pronominum Constructio.

**M**Ei, tui, sui, nostri, vestri genitivi primitivorum ponuntur cum passio significatur: ut, Primitiva.

*Languet<sup>a</sup> desiderio<sup>b</sup> tui.*

*Ovi.<sup>a</sup> Pârsq;<sup>b</sup> tui latitat corpore clausa meo.<sup>a</sup> Imago<sup>b</sup> nostri.* Derivativa.

Meus, tuus, suus, noster, vester, adjiunguntur cum actio vel possessio rei denotatur: ut, *Favet<sup>a</sup> desiderio<sup>b</sup> tuo.*

*<sup>a</sup> Imago<sup>b</sup> nostra, id est, quam nos possidemus.*

Nostrium & vestrum genitivi sequuntur distributiva, partitiva, comparativa, & superlativa: ut; *<sup>a</sup> Unusquisque<sup>b</sup> vestrum.* *<sup>a</sup> Nemo<sup>b</sup> nostrum.* *Ne<sup>a</sup> cui<sup>b</sup> vestrum sit mirum.* *<sup>a</sup> Major<sup>b</sup> vestrum.* *<sup>a</sup> Maximus natu<sup>b</sup> nostrum.*

Hæc possessiva, meus, tuus, suus, noster, & vester, hos genitivos post se recipiant. Ipsius, solius, unius, duorum, trium, &c. Omnium, plurium, paucorum, cujusque; & genitivos participiorum, quæ ad genitivum primitivi in possessivo inclusum referuntur: ut,

*Ex<sup>a</sup> tuo<sup>b</sup> ipsius animo conjecturam feceris.*

*Cic. Dico<sup>a</sup> meâ<sup>b</sup> unius operâ Rempubicam esse liberatam.*

*Idem. <sup>a</sup> Meum<sup>b</sup> solius peccatum corrigi non potest.*

*Eras. <sup>a</sup> Noster<sup>b</sup> duorû eventus ostendat, utra gens sit melior.*

*In<sup>a</sup> sua<sup>b</sup> cujûsq; laude præstantior.<sup>a</sup> Nostra<sup>b</sup> omnium memoria*

*Brut. ad Cic. <sup>a</sup> Vestris<sup>b</sup> paucorum respondet laudibus.*

*Hor.—scripta Cum<sup>a</sup> mea nemo legat, vulgo recitare<sup>b</sup> timentis.*

Sui & Suus reciproca sunt, hoc est, semper reflectuntur ad id quod præcessit in eadem oratione; ut, *<sup>a</sup> Petrus nimum admiratur<sup>b</sup> se.* *Parcit erroribus<sup>b</sup> suis.* Aut annexa per copulam: ut, *Magnopere<sup>a</sup> Petrus rogat, ne<sup>b</sup> se deserat.* Sui & suus reciproca.

Ipse ex pronominebus solum trium personarum significationem representat: ut;

*<sup>a</sup> Ipse<sup>b</sup> vidi, <sup>a</sup> Ipse<sup>b</sup> videris, <sup>a</sup> Ipse<sup>b</sup> dixit.*

Et nominibus pariter, ac pronominebus adiungitur; ut,

*<sup>a</sup> Ipse<sup>b</sup> ego, <sup>a</sup> Ipse<sup>b</sup> ille, <sup>a</sup> Ipse<sup>b</sup> Hercules.*

*Idem, etiam omnibus personis jungi potest; ut, Idem.*

*Ego<sup>a</sup> idem<sup>b</sup> adsum.*

Terent.



Terent. <sup>a</sup> *Idem* <sup>b</sup> *bas nuptias* <sup>b</sup> *perge facere.*

Virgil. <sup>a</sup> *Idem* <sup>b</sup> *jungat vulpes,* & <sup>b</sup> *mulgeat hircos.*

Demon-  
strativa  
hic, ille,  
iste.  
Ille, &  
iste.

Hæc demonstrativa, Hic, ille, iste, sic distinguuntur: Hic mihi proximum demonstrat; Iste, eum qui apud te est; Ille, eum qui ab utroque remotus est, indicat.

Ille, tum usurpatur, cum ob eminentiam rem quampiam demonstramus: ut, *Alexander ille magnus.* Iste verò ponitur, quando cum contemptu rei alicujus mentionem facimus: ut Terent. *Istum æmulum quoad poteris ab ea pellito.*

Hic &  
ille.

Hic & ille, cum ad duo anteposita referuntur, Hic, ad posterius & propius; Ille, ad prius & remotius propriè ac usitatissimè referri debet: ut Col. <sup>a</sup> *Agricolæ contrarium est* <sup>a</sup> *a pastoris propositum:* <sup>b</sup> *ille quam maximè subactis & puro solo gaudet,* <sup>bb</sup> *hic novali graminosoque:* <sup>b</sup> *ille fructum è terra sperat,* <sup>bb</sup> *hic è pecore.*

Est tamen, ubi è diverso pronomen *Hic* ad remotius suppositum referri invenias, & *ille* ad proximius.

## VERBORUM CONSTRUCTIO.

*Nominativus post verbum.*

Nomi-  
nat, u-  
trinque.

**V**erba substantiva, ut *Sum, forem, fio, existo:* verba vocandi passiva, ut *Nominor, appellor, dicor, vocor, nuncupor;* & iis similia, ut *Scribor, salutor, habeor, existimor:* item verba gestus, ut *Sedeo, dormio, cubo, incedo, curro,* utrinque nominativum expetunt: ut, <sup>b</sup> *Deus* <sup>a</sup> *est* <sup>b</sup> *summum bonum.*

<sup>b</sup> *Perpusilli* <sup>a</sup> *vocantur* <sup>b</sup> *nani.* <sup>b</sup> *Fides religionis nostræ* <sup>b</sup> *fundamentum* <sup>a</sup> *habetur.* *Malus* <sup>b</sup> *pastor* <sup>a</sup> *dormit.* <sup>b</sup> *supinus.* *Lactantius.* <sup>b</sup> *Homo* <sup>a</sup> *incedit* <sup>b</sup> *erectus in cælum.*

Denique omnia ferè verba post se nominativum habent adjectivi nominis, quod cum supposito verbi casu, genere, & numero concordat: ut,

<sup>a</sup> *Rex* <sup>a</sup> *mandavit* <sup>b</sup> *primus extirpari hæresin.*

<sup>b</sup> *Pii* <sup>a</sup> *orant* <sup>b</sup> *taciti.* <sup>b</sup> *Boni* <sup>a</sup> *discunt* <sup>b</sup> *seduli.*

Infiniti  
verbi  
constru-  
tio.

Infinitum quoque utrinque eisdem casus habet, præcipue



cipue cū verba optandi, eisque similia accedunt; ut,  
 Hypocrita cupit a videri b justus. Hypocrita cupit b se a videri  
 b justum. Malo b dives a esse quam haberi. Malo b me b divitem  
 a esse quam haberi. Claud. Vivitur exiguo melius; natura  
 b beatis b Omnibus a esse dedit, si quis cognoverit uti.

Martial. b Nobis non licet a esse tam b disertis, vel disertos.  
 Terentius. Expedit b bonas a esse b vobis.

Ovidius. Quo b mihi commisso non licet a esse b piam.

Quamvis in his postremis exemplis subaudiuntur accusativi ante verba infinita. b Nos a esse b disertos. b Vos  
 a esse b bonas. b Me a esse b piam.

### Genitivus post verbum.

**S**um genitivum postulat, quoties significat possessio-  
 nem, aut ad aliquid pertinere: ut

Sum fig-  
 nis. poss.  
 gen.

Virgilius.—pecus a est b Melibœi.

Cicero. b Adolescentis a est majores natu revereri.

Virg. b Regum a est Parcere subjectis, & debellare superbos:

Excipiuntur hi nominativi, Meum, tuum, suum, no-  
 strum, vestrum, humanum, belluinum, & similia: ut  
 Non a est b meum contra auctoritatem Senatus dicere.

Terent. Eja haud b vestrum a est iracundos esse.

b Humanum a est irasci.

At hic subintelligi videtur officium, quod aliquando  
 etiam exprimitur: ut Terent. Tuum a est b officium has  
 bene ut adsimiles nuptias.

Verba æstimandi genitivo gaudent: ut, b Plurimi passim  
 a sit pecunia. Pudor b parvi a penditur. b Nihili, vel b pro  
 nihilo a habentur literæ.

Æsti-  
 mandi  
 verba  
 gen.

Horat. b Pluris opes nunc a sunt, quam præci temporis annis.

Æstimo, vel genitivum, vel ablativum adsciscit: ut,  
 Valerius Max. Non b hujus te a æstimo. b Magno ubique  
 virtus a æstimanda est.

Flocci, nauci, nihili, pili, assis, hujus, teruncii, his  
 verbis, æstimo, pendo, facio, peculiariter adjiciuntur,  
 ut, Ego illum b flocci a pendo. Nec b hujus a facio, qui me  
 b pili a æstimat.

Singul.

Singularia sunt ista; <sup>b</sup> *Equi boni* <sup>a</sup> *consulo*. <sup>b</sup> *Equi boni* <sup>a</sup> *facio*, id est, in bonam accipio partem.

Accusandi  
verba,  
&c.

Verba accusandi, damnandi, monendi, absolvendi, & consimilia genitivum postulant, qui crimen significet; ut,

Plaut. *Qui alterum* <sup>a</sup> *incusat* <sup>b</sup> *probri*, ipsum se intueri oportet.

Cicero. Etiam <sup>b</sup> *sceleris* <sup>a</sup> *condemnat* generum suum.

Ovid. *Parce tuum vatem* <sup>b</sup> *sceleris* <sup>a</sup> *damnare*, Cupido.

<sup>a</sup> *Admoneto illum pristinae* <sup>b</sup> *fortunae*. <sup>b</sup> *Furti* <sup>a</sup> *absolutus est*.

Vertitur hic genitivus aliquando in ablativum, vel cum praepositione, vel sine praepositione; ut,

Cic. *Si in me iniquus es iudex*, <sup>a</sup> *condemnabo eodem ego te* <sup>b</sup> *crimine*. Gellius. *Uxorem* <sup>b</sup> *de pudicitia graviter* <sup>a</sup> *accusavit*. Cic. *Putavi ea* <sup>b</sup> *de re* <sup>a</sup> *admonendum esse te*.

Uterque, nullus, alter, neuter, alius, ambo, & superlativus gradus, non nisi in ablativo id genus verbis subduntur; ut, <sup>a</sup> *Accusas furti*, an *stupri*, an <sup>b</sup> *utroque*? sive <sup>b</sup> *de utroque*? <sup>b</sup> *Ambobus*, vel <sup>b</sup> *de ambobus*? <sup>b</sup> *Neutro*, vel <sup>b</sup> *de neutro*? <sup>b</sup> *De plurimis simul* <sup>a</sup> *accusaris*.

Satago,  
&c.

Satago, misereor, miseresco, genitivum admittunt: ut,

Terent. *Is* <sup>b</sup> *rerum suarum* <sup>a</sup> *satagit*.

Virgil—oro <sup>a</sup> *miserere* <sup>b</sup> *laborum*.

Tantorum, <sup>a</sup> *miserere* <sup>b</sup> *animi non digna ferentis*.

Stattius. Et <sup>b</sup> *generis* <sup>a</sup> *miseresce tui*.

Misereor,  
&c.

At misereor & miseresco, rarius cum dativo leguntur;

ut Sen. *Huic succurro*, <sup>b</sup> *huic* <sup>a</sup> *misereor*.

Boëtius. *Dilige jure bonos* & <sup>a</sup> *miseresce* <sup>b</sup> *malis*.

Reminisco,  
&c.

Reminisco, obliviscor, memini, genitivum aut accusativum desiderant: ut, *Data* <sup>b</sup> *fidei* <sup>a</sup> *reminiscitur*.

*Proprium est stultitiae aliorum vitia cernere*, <sup>a</sup> *obliviscor*

<sup>b</sup> *suorum*. Ter. *Faciam ut* <sup>b</sup> *meique ac hujus* <sup>b</sup> *diei*, ac <sup>b</sup> *loci*

*semper* <sup>a</sup> *memineris*. Plaut. <sup>b</sup> *Omnia qua curant senes*

<sup>a</sup> *meminerunt*. <sup>a</sup> *Memini* <sup>b</sup> *de hac re*, <sup>b</sup> *de armis*, <sup>b</sup> *de re*, id

est, mentionem feci.

Potior  
gen. aut  
ablat.

Potior, aut genitivo, aut ablativo jungitur; ut

Plaut. *Romani* <sup>b</sup> *signorum* & *armorum* <sup>a</sup> *potiori sunt*.

Virg. *Egressi optata Troës* <sup>a</sup> *potuntur* <sup>b</sup> *arena*.

Dati

## Dativus post verbum.

**O**mnia verba acquisitivè posita adsciscunt dativum ejus rei, cui aliquid quocunque modo acquiritur; ut Plaut. *b Mihi istic nec a feritur, nec a metitur.* Virg. *Nescio quis teneros oculus b mihi a fascinat agnos.* Verba acquis. posita dat. regunt.

## Huic regulæ appendent varii generis verba.

Imprimis, verba significantia commodum aut incommodum regunt dativum; ut Virg. *Illa seges demum b votis a respondet avari agricolæ.* Com- modum & incommodum.

*Non potes b mihi a commodare, nec a incommodare.*

*Idem—validis a incumbite b remis.*

*Suam eruditionem b tibi acceptam a fert.*

Ex his quædam efferuntur etiam cum accusativo, ut Cicero. *b Unum a studetis omnes, unum sentitis.* Excep- tio.

Plaut. *Si ea memorem, quæ b ad ventris visum a conducunt, mora est.*

Cicero. *b In hæc studia a incumbite. Naturæne plus b ad eloquentiam a conferat, an doctrina.*

*b Fessum quies plurimum a juvat.*

Verba comparandi regunt dativum; ut, Virg.—*sic b parvis a componere magna solebam.* Verba comparandi.

*b Fratri se & opibus & dignatione a adæquavit.*

Interdum additur ablativus cum præpositione; ut, *a Comparo Virgilium b cum Homero.*

Aliquando accusativus cum præpositione Ad; ut, *Si b ad eum a comparatur, nihil est.*

Verba dandi & reddendi regunt dativum; ut, *Fortuna b multis nimium a dedit, b nulli satis.* Verba dandi. *Ingratus est, qui gratiam bene b merenti non a reponit.*

Hæc variam habent constructionem; *a dono b tibi hoc munus; a dono b te hoc munere.*

Cicero. *Huic b rei aliquid temporis a impertias.*

Terent. *Plurimâ salute b Parmenonem summum suum a in-*

<sup>a</sup> impertit Gnaitho. <sup>a</sup> Asperfit mihi <sup>b</sup> labem. <sup>a</sup> Asperfit me <sup>b</sup> labe.  
<sup>a</sup> Instravit <sup>b</sup> equo penulam : <sup>a</sup> Instravit equum <sup>b</sup> penulā.  
 Ovid. Ut piget infido <sup>a</sup> consuluisse <sup>b</sup> viro, id est, dodisse  
 consilium, vel etiam proplexisse.

Lucan. <sup>b</sup> Reſtorémque ratis de cunctis <sup>a</sup> consulit astris, id  
 est, petit consilium. <sup>a</sup> Consule <sup>b</sup> salutē tuā, id est, prospice.  
 Ter. Pessimē istuc <sup>b</sup> in te atque in illum <sup>a</sup> consulis, iſtatuis.  
<sup>a</sup> Metuo, <sup>a</sup> timeo, <sup>a</sup> formido <sup>b</sup> tibi, vel <sup>b</sup> de te, i. sum sollicitus  
 pro te. <sup>a</sup> Metuo, <sup>a</sup> timeo, <sup>a</sup> formido <sup>b</sup> te, vel <sup>b</sup> à te : scilicet  
 nē mihi noceas.

Verba  
promit-  
tendi.

Verba promittendi ac solvendi regunt dativum ; ut,  
 Cicero. Hæc <sup>b</sup> tibi <sup>a</sup> promitto, ac recipio sanctissimē esse ob-  
 servaturum.

Verba  
impe-  
randi.

Cicero. *Es* alienum <sup>b</sup> mihi <sup>a</sup> numeravit.

Verba imperandi & nunciandi dativum requirunt,  
 Horat. <sup>a</sup> Imperat aut servit collecta pecunia <sup>b</sup> cuique.  
 Idem. Quid de quoque viro, & <sup>b</sup> cui <sup>a</sup> dicas, saepe caveto.

Dicimus, <sup>a</sup> Tempero, <sup>a</sup> moderor <sup>b</sup> tibi & <sup>b</sup> te. <sup>a</sup> Refero  
<sup>b</sup> tibi, & <sup>b</sup> ad te. Item, <sup>a</sup> Refero <sup>b</sup> ad Senatum, id est, pro-  
 pono. <sup>a</sup> Scribo, <sup>a</sup> mitto <sup>b</sup> tibi, & <sup>b</sup> ad te. <sup>a</sup> Do <sup>b</sup> tibi literas,  
 ut ad aliquem feras. <sup>a</sup> Do <sup>b</sup> ad te literas, id est, mitto ut  
 legas.

Verba  
fidendi.

Verba fidendi dativum regunt : ut, Horat.  
 — Vacuis <sup>a</sup> committere <sup>b</sup> venis Nil nisi lene decet.  
<sup>b</sup> Mulieri nē <sup>a</sup> credas, ne mortuæ quidem.

Verba  
obse-  
quendi.

Verba obsequendi & repugnandi dativum regunt : ut,  
 Semper <sup>a</sup> obtemperat pius filius <sup>b</sup> patri. Quæ homines  
 arant, navigant, ædificant, <sup>b</sup> virtuti omnia <sup>a</sup> parent. Ip-  
 sum hunc orabo, <sup>b</sup> huic <sup>a</sup> supplicabo.

Perſius. — venienti <sup>a</sup> occurrere <sup>b</sup> morbo.

Ignavis <sup>b</sup> precibus Fortuna <sup>a</sup> repugnat.

At ex his quædam cum aliis casibus copulantur : ut,  
<sup>b</sup> Ad amorem nihil potuit <sup>a</sup> accedere. Hoc <sup>a</sup> accessus meis  
<sup>b</sup> malis. Illud <sup>a</sup> constat <sup>b</sup> omnibus, seu <sup>b</sup> inter omnes.

Terent. — Hæc <sup>b</sup> fratri mecum non <sup>a</sup> conveniunt.

Juven. Sævis inter se <sup>a</sup> convenit <sup>b</sup> urſis. <sup>a</sup> Ausculto <sup>b</sup> tibi,  
 id est, obedio, <sup>a</sup> Ausculto <sup>b</sup> te, id est, audio. Adamas <sup>a</sup> dissidet  
<sup>b</sup> magis.

<sup>b</sup> magneti, seu <sup>b</sup> cum magnete. <sup>a</sup> Certat <sup>b</sup> cum illo, & Græcanice <sup>b</sup> illi. Catul. Noli <sup>a</sup> pugnare <sup>b</sup> duobus, id est, <sup>b</sup> contra duos. Virg. Tu dic <sup>b</sup> mecum quo pignore <sup>a</sup> certes.

Verba minandi & irascendi regunt dativum: ut, <sup>b</sup> Utrique mortem <sup>a</sup> minatus est. Terent. <sup>b</sup> Adolescenti nihil <sup>a</sup> minandi. est quod <sup>a</sup> succenseat.

Sum cum compositis, præter Possum, exigit dativum: Sum. ut, Rex pius <sup>a</sup> est <sup>b</sup> reipub. ornamento. <sup>b</sup> Mihi nec <sup>a</sup> obest, nec <sup>a</sup> prodest. Hor. Multa <sup>b</sup> petentibus <sup>a</sup> desunt multa.

### Dativum postulant verba composita cum his præpositionibus.

Præ. Cicer. Ego meis <sup>b</sup> majoribus virtute <sup>a</sup> præluxi.

Sed Præeo, prævinco, præcedo, præcurro, præverto, prævertor, accusativo junguntur.

Verba  
compo-  
sita.

Ad. Albo <sup>b</sup> gallo ne manum <sup>a</sup> admoliaris.

Con. <sup>a</sup> Conducit hoc tuæ <sup>b</sup> laudi. <sup>a</sup> Convixit <sup>b</sup> nobis.

Sub. Terent. <sup>a</sup> Subolet jam <sup>b</sup> uxori, quod ego machinor.

Ante. Cic. Iniquissimam pacem justissimo <sup>b</sup> bello <sup>a</sup> antefero.

Post. <sup>a</sup> Posthabeo, <sup>a</sup> postpono <sup>b</sup> famæ pecuniam.

Virg. <sup>a</sup> Postposui tamen illorum mea seria <sup>b</sup> ludo.

Terent. dixit. <sup>a</sup> Qui suum commodum posthabuis  
præ meo commodo.

Ob. Ter. Quum <sup>b</sup> nemini <sup>a</sup> obtrudi potest, iter ad me.

In. <sup>a</sup> Impendet <sup>b</sup> omnibus periculum.

Inter. Cicer. Ille huic <sup>b</sup> negotio non <sup>a</sup> interfuit modò, sed  
etiam præfuit.

Pauca ex his mutant dativum aliquoties in alium ca-  
sum: ut Quint. <sup>a</sup> Præstat ingenio aliis <sup>b</sup> alium. <sup>b</sup> Multos  
viro-  
rum <sup>a</sup> anteit sapientiâ. Terent. <sup>b</sup> In amore hæc <sup>a</sup> in-  
sunt vitia. Plin. <sup>a</sup> Interdico tibi <sup>b</sup> aquâ & igni.

Varia  
confir-  
matio.

Est pro habeo dativum exigit: ut,

Est pro  
habeo.

Perfi. Velle suum <sup>b</sup> cuique <sup>a</sup> est, nec voto vivitur uno.

Virg. <sup>a</sup> Est <sup>b</sup> mihi namque domi pater, est injusta noverca.

Huic confine est suppetis: ut,

Suppet.

Horat. Pauper enim non est, <sup>b</sup> cui rerum <sup>a</sup> suppetis usus.

Gemin.  
dativ.

Sum, cum multis aliis, geminum adsciscit dativum, ut, <sup>b</sup> Exitio <sup>a</sup> est avidis mare <sup>b</sup> navis.

Speras <sup>b</sup> tibi <sup>b</sup> laudi <sup>a</sup> fore, quod <sup>b</sup> mihi <sup>b</sup> vitio <sup>a</sup> vertis?

Nemo <sup>b</sup> sibi mimos <sup>a</sup> accipere debet <sup>b</sup> favori.

Dativus  
festivi-  
tatis.

Est ubi hic dativus, tibi aut sibi, aut etiam mihi, nullā necessitatis, at festivitatis potius causā additur: ut, Ego <sup>b</sup> tibi hoc effectum <sup>a</sup> dabo. Ter. <sup>a</sup> Expedi <sup>b</sup> mihi hoc negotium. Suo <sup>b</sup> sibi hunc <sup>a</sup> jugulo gladio.

### ACCUSATIVUS POST VERBUM.

Verba  
transi-  
tiva.

**V**erba transitiva cujuscunque generis, sive activi, sive communis, sive deponentis, exigunt accusativum: ut Hor. <sup>b</sup> Percontatorem <sup>a</sup> fugito, nam garrulus idem est. Idem. Nec <sup>a</sup> retinent patula <sup>b</sup> commissa fideliter aures. Virg. Imprimis <sup>a</sup> venerare <sup>b</sup> deos. Aper <sup>b</sup> agros <sup>a</sup> depopulatur.

Quinetiam verba, quamlibet alioquin intransitiva atque absoluta, accusativum admittunt cognatæ significationis: ut Cic. Tertiam <sup>b</sup> aetatem hominum <sup>a</sup> vivebat Nestor. Virg. — longam incommutata videtur <sup>a</sup> Ire <sup>b</sup> viam Plaut. Duram <sup>a</sup> servit <sup>b</sup> servitutem.

Hunc accusativum mutant authores non rarò in ablativum: ut Plaut. Diu videor <sup>b</sup> vitā <sup>a</sup> vivere. <sup>a</sup> Ire rectā <sup>b</sup> viā. Sueton. <sup>b</sup> Morte <sup>a</sup> obiit repentinā.

Accusat.  
fig.

Sunt quæ figuratè accusativum habent: ut, Virgil. — Nec vox <sup>b</sup> hominem <sup>a</sup> sonat, & Dea certè! Juven. Qui <sup>b</sup> Curios <sup>a</sup> simulant, & <sup>b</sup> Bacchanalia <sup>a</sup> vivunt. Horat. <sup>b</sup> Pastillos Rufillus <sup>a</sup> olet, Gorgonius <sup>b</sup> hircum.

### DUO ACCUSATIVI.

Verba  
rogandi,  
&c.

Verba rogandi, docendi, vestiendi, duplicem regunt accusativum: ut, Tu modò <sup>a</sup> posce <sup>b</sup> Deum <sup>b</sup> veniam. <sup>a</sup> Dedito <sup>b</sup> te istos <sup>b</sup> mores. Ridiculum est te <sup>b</sup> me <sup>a</sup> admonere <sup>b</sup> istud. Terent. <sup>a</sup> Induit <sup>b</sup> se <sup>b</sup> calceos, quos prius exuerat.

Excep-  
tio 1.

Rogandi verba interdum mutant alterum accusativum in ablativum: ut,

Virg. <sup>b</sup> Ipsum <sup>a</sup> obtestemur, <sup>b</sup> veniamque <sup>a</sup> oremus <sup>bb</sup> ab ipso. Terent. <sup>b</sup> Suspicionem istam <sup>bb</sup> ex illis <sup>a</sup> quare.

Vestiendi



Vestendi verba interdum mutant alterum accusativum in ablativum, vel dativum: ut, <sup>a</sup> Induo <sup>b</sup> te <sup>bb</sup> tunicam, <sup>a</sup> nica, vel <sup>bb</sup> tibi <sup>b</sup> tunicam.

### ABLATIVUS POST VERBUM.

**Q**uodvis verbum admittit ablativum significantem instrumentum, aut causam, aut modum actionis.

#### INSTRUMENTUM.

ut, *Damona non <sup>b</sup> armis, sed morte <sup>a</sup> subegit Iesus.*

Horat. *Naturam <sup>a</sup> expellas <sup>b</sup> furcâ licet, usque recurras.*

Virg. *Hi <sup>b</sup> jaculis, illi certant <sup>a</sup> defendere <sup>b</sup> saxis.*

#### CAUSA.

ut Ter. <sup>a</sup> Gaudeo (ita me dii ament) <sup>b</sup> gnati <sup>b</sup> causa. *Vehementer <sup>b</sup> irâ <sup>a</sup> excanduit.*

Horat. *Invidus alterius <sup>b</sup> rebus <sup>a</sup> macrescit opimis.*

#### MODUS ACTIONIS.

ut, *Mirâ <sup>b</sup> celeritate rem <sup>a</sup> peregit.*

Juven. *Invigilate viri, tacito nam tempora <sup>b</sup> gressu <sup>a</sup> Diffugium, nulloque <sup>b</sup> sono <sup>a</sup> convertitur annus.*

Ovid. *Dum vires annique sinunt, tolerare laborem, Jam <sup>a</sup> venit tacito curva senectû <sup>b</sup> pede.*

Ablativo causæ & modi actionis aliquando additur præpositio: ut, <sup>a</sup> Baccharis <sup>b</sup> præ ebrietate.

*Summa <sup>b</sup> cunctis humanitate <sup>a</sup> tractavit hominem.*

Quibuslibet verbis subjicitur nomen præteritum in ablativo casu: ut, <sup>b</sup> Terencio, seu victoriam nunc non <sup>a</sup> emerit. *Summa <sup>b</sup> cunctis humanitate <sup>a</sup> tractavit hominem.*

Livius. *Multo <sup>b</sup> sanguine ac vulneribus ea victoria <sup>a</sup> flectit.*

Vili, paulo, minimo, magno, nimio, plurimo, dimidio, duplo, adjiciuntur sæpe sine substantivis: ut,

Terent. <sup>a</sup> Redime te captum quàm queas <sup>b</sup> minimo. <sup>b</sup> Vili <sup>a</sup> venit triticum.

Senec. <sup>a</sup> Constat <sup>b</sup> parvo fames, <sup>b</sup> magno fastidium.

Excipiuntur hi genitivi sine substantivis positi. Tanti, quanti, pluris, minoris, tantidem, quâvis, quâlibet, quâquam.

quanticumq; ut Cic. <sup>b</sup> *Tanti* <sup>a</sup> *eris alius*, <sup>b</sup> *quanti tibi* <sup>a</sup> *sueris*. Non <sup>a</sup> *vendo* <sup>b</sup> *pluris*, quàm *alii*, fortasse etiam <sup>b</sup> *minoris*. Ovid. *Vix Priamus* <sup>b</sup> *tanti*, totaque *Troja* <sup>a</sup> *fuit*.

Sin, addantur substantiva, in ablativo efferuntur: ut, Aul. Gel. <sup>b</sup> *Tantâ* *mercede* <sup>a</sup> *docuit*, <sup>b</sup> *quantâ* *hâstenus* *nemo*. <sup>b</sup> *Minore* *pretio* <sup>a</sup> *vendidi*, quàm *emi*.

Valeo. Valeo etiam interdum cum accusativo junctum reperitur: ut Varr. *Denarii dicti*, quod <sup>b</sup> *denos aris* <sup>a</sup> *valebant*: *quinarii*, quod <sup>b</sup> *quinos*.

Verba abundandi, implendi, onerandi, & his diversa ablativo gaudent: ut, Terent. <sup>b</sup> *Amore* <sup>a</sup> *abundas* *Antipho*.

*Malo virum* <sup>b</sup> *pecuniâ*, quàm *pecuniam* <sup>b</sup> *viro* <sup>a</sup> *indigentem*.

Salust. *Sylla omnes suos* <sup>b</sup> *divitiis* <sup>a</sup> *explevit*.

Terent. *Hoc te* <sup>b</sup> *crimine* <sup>a</sup> *expedi*.

Cic. *Homines nequissimi quibus te* <sup>a</sup> *onerant* <sup>b</sup> *mendaciis*?

Virg. *Ego hoc te* <sup>b</sup> *fâsce* <sup>a</sup> *levabo*.

Salust. *Aliquem familiarem suo* <sup>b</sup> *sermone* <sup>a</sup> *participavit*.

Exceptio. Ex quibus quædam nonnunquam etiam in genitivum feruntur: ut Virgil.

*Quâm dives nivei pecoris*, quàm <sup>b</sup> *lactis* <sup>a</sup> *abundans*?

Terent. *Quasi tu hujus* <sup>a</sup> *indigeas* <sup>b</sup> *patris*.

*Quid est, quod in hac causa* <sup>b</sup> *defensionis* <sup>a</sup> *egeat*?

Virg. <sup>a</sup> *Implentur veteris* <sup>b</sup> *Bacchi pinguis* *que ferina*.

Idem. *Postquam dextra fuit* <sup>b</sup> *cadis* <sup>a</sup> *saturata*.

Terent. *Omnes mihi labores leves fuere*, præterquam <sup>b</sup> *tui* <sup>a</sup> *carendum* *quod erat*.

*Paternum servum sui* <sup>a</sup> *participavit* <sup>b</sup> *consilii*.

Fungor, Fungor, fruor, utor, & similia, ablativo junguntur; ut, Cic. *Qui adipisci veram gloriam volunt*, *justitia* <sup>a</sup> *fungantur* <sup>b</sup> *officiis*. Optimum est *alienâ* <sup>a</sup> *frui* <sup>b</sup> *insaniâ*.

In re mala <sup>b</sup> *animo si bono* <sup>a</sup> *utare*, juvat.

Virgil. *Aspice venturo* <sup>a</sup> *latentur ut omnia* <sup>b</sup> *seculo*.

Cæsar. *Qui suâ* <sup>b</sup> *victoriâ tam insolenter* <sup>a</sup> *gloriarentur*.

Hor. *Diruit, adificat*, <sup>a</sup> *mutat quadrata* <sup>b</sup> *rotundis*. *Vesco*

<sup>b</sup> *carnibus*. Virg. — *haud equidem tali me* <sup>a</sup> *dignor* <sup>b</sup> *honore*.

Terent.

Exa

Terent. *Ut* <sup>b</sup> malis <sup>a</sup> gaudeat alienis.

Plaut. *Exemplorum* <sup>b</sup> multitudine <sup>a</sup> superfedendum est.

Macrobi. *Regni eum* <sup>b</sup> societate <sup>a</sup> numeravit.

Plaut. <sup>a</sup> Communicabo te semper <sup>b</sup> mensâ meâ.

<sup>a</sup> Prosequor te <sup>b</sup> amore, <sup>b</sup> laude, <sup>b</sup> honore, &c. l. e. *Prosequor* <sup>a</sup> amo, <sup>a</sup> laudo, <sup>a</sup> honoro, <sup>a</sup> Afficio te <sup>b</sup> gaudio, <sup>b</sup> supplicio, <sup>b</sup> dolore, &c. id est, *exhilaro, punio, contristo.* <sup>a</sup> Afficio.

Mereor, cum adverbis bene, malè, melius, pejus, Meretur; optimè, pessimè, ablativo adhæret cum præpositione

De: ut, <sup>b</sup> De me nunquam bene <sup>a</sup> meritus est.

Erasmus <sup>b</sup> de lingua Latina optimè <sup>a</sup> meritus est.

Catullina pessimè <sup>b</sup> de republica <sup>a</sup> meruit.

Quædam accipiendi, distandi, & auferendi verba ablativum cum præpositione optant: ut, *Istuc* <sup>b</sup> ex multis jam pridem <sup>a</sup> audiveram. Luc. <sup>b</sup> A trepido vix <sup>a</sup> abstinet ira magistro. <sup>a</sup> Nasci <sup>b</sup> à principibus fortuitum est.

Procul <sup>a</sup> abest <sup>b</sup> ab urbe Imperator.

Vertitur hic ablativus aliquando in dativum: ut,

Horat. *Vivere si rectè nescis,* <sup>a</sup> discode <sup>b</sup> peritis.

Ovid. *Est virtus placitis* <sup>a</sup> abstinuisse <sup>b</sup> bonis.

Virg. *Heu fuge, natæ Dea, teque his,* ait, <sup>a</sup> eripe <sup>b</sup> flammæ.

Verbis, quæ vim comparationis obtinent, adjicitur ablativus significans mensuram excessus: ut, *Deforme existimabat,* quos <sup>b</sup> dignitate <sup>a</sup> præstaret ab <sup>b</sup> iis <sup>b</sup> virtutibus <sup>a</sup> superari.

Quibuslibet verbis additur ablativus absolute sumptus: ut, *Imperante* <sup>b</sup> Augusto, <sup>a</sup> natus est Christus: *Imperante* <sup>b</sup> Tiberio, <sup>a</sup> crucifixus. Juven. *Gredo pudicitiam,* <sup>b</sup> Saturno rege, <sup>a</sup> moratam in terris.

*Nil* <sup>a</sup> desperandum, <sup>b</sup> Christo duce, & auspice Christo.

*Fam* <sup>b</sup> Maria, <sup>b</sup> audito Christum venisse, <sup>a</sup> cucurrit.

Verbis quibusdam additur auferendi casus per Synecdochen, & poetice accusativus: ut, <sup>a</sup> Egrotat <sup>b</sup> animo magis quàm corpore. <sup>a</sup> Candet <sup>b</sup> dentes. <sup>a</sup> Rubet <sup>b</sup> capillos.

Quædam tamen efferuntur in gignendi casu: ut,

*Absurdè facis,* qui <sup>a</sup> angas te <sup>b</sup> animi.

*Exanimatus* <sup>a</sup> pendet <sup>b</sup> animi. <sup>a</sup> Despiebam <sup>b</sup> mentis.

Diversi  
casus.

Plant. <sup>a</sup> Discrucior <sup>b</sup> animi, quia ab domo abundū est mihi.  
Eidem verbo diversi casus diversæ rationis apponi  
possunt: ut,

Passivo-  
rum con-  
structio.

1 Dedit 3 mihi 2 vestē 4 pignori, 6 te presente 5 propriā manu.

Passivis additur ablativus agentis, sed antecedente præ-  
positione, & interdum dativus: ut,

Horat. <sup>a</sup> Laudatur <sup>b</sup> ab his, <sup>a</sup> culpatur <sup>b</sup> ab illis.

Cicero. Honesti bonis <sup>b</sup> viris, non occulta <sup>a</sup> petuntur.

Quorum participia frequentius dativis gaudent: ut,

Virg. Nulla tuarum <sup>a</sup> audita <sup>b</sup> mihi, nec visa sororum.

Horat. Oblitusque meorum, <sup>a</sup> obliviscendus <sup>b</sup> illis.

Cæteri casus manent in passivis, qui fuerunt acti-  
vorum: ut, <sup>a</sup> Accusaris à me <sup>b</sup> furti. <sup>a</sup> Habebis <sup>b</sup> ludibrio.

<sup>a</sup> Dedoceris à me istos <sup>b</sup> mores. <sup>a</sup> Privaberis <sup>b</sup> magistratu.

Neutro-  
pass. con-  
structio.

Vapulō, vaneō, liceo, exulo, fio, neutro-passiva,

passivam constructionem habent: ut, <sup>b</sup> A præceptore

<sup>a</sup> vapulabis: Malo <sup>b</sup> à civē <sup>a</sup> spoliari, quā <sup>b</sup> ab hoste <sup>a</sup> vanire.

Quid <sup>a</sup> fiet <sup>b</sup> ab illo? Virtus parvo pretio <sup>a</sup> licet <sup>b</sup> omnibus.

Cur <sup>b</sup> à convivis <sup>a</sup> exulat philosophia?

Infiniti-  
vorum  
constru-  
ctio.

Quibusdam tum verbis tum adjectivis, familiariter  
subiiciuntur verba infinita: ut,

Virgil. — <sup>a</sup> Fuvat usque <sup>b</sup> morari, Et conferre gradum.

Ovid. <sup>b</sup> Dicere quæ <sup>a</sup> puduit, <sup>b</sup> scribere <sup>a</sup> iussit amor.

Martial. <sup>a</sup> Vis <sup>b</sup> fieri dives, Pontice? Nil cupias.

Virg. Et erat tum <sup>a</sup> dignus <sup>b</sup> amari. Horat. <sup>a</sup> Audax om-  
nia <sup>b</sup> perpeti, Gens humana ruit per vetitum nefas.

Eclipsa.

Pomuntur interdum figuratē, & absolute verba infi-  
nita: ut, Hæcine <sup>b</sup> fieri flagitia? subauditur, <sup>a</sup> decet,

<sup>a</sup> oportet, <sup>a</sup> par est, <sup>a</sup> æquum est, aut aliquid simile.

Virg. Criminibus <sup>b</sup> terrere novis, hinc <sup>b</sup> spargere voces

In vulgum ambiguas, & <sup>b</sup> querere conscius arma.

Enallage. Id est, terrebat, spargebat, quarebat.

## ¶ DE GERUNDIIS.

Geru-  
ndia.

**G**erundia sive Gerundivæ voces, & supina, regunt  
casus suorum verborum: ut,

Cicer.

Cicer. *Efferor studio* <sup>a</sup> *videndi* <sup>b</sup> *parentes.*

Ovid. <sup>a</sup> *Utendum est* <sup>b</sup> *etate, cito pede præterit ætas.*

Virg.—<sup>a</sup> *Scitatum* <sup>b</sup> *oracula Phœbi Mittimus.*

Gerundia in *di* pendent à quibusdam tum substanti. Di-  
vis, tum adjectivis: ut Virgil.

*Et quæ tanta fuit Romam tibi* <sup>a</sup> *causa* <sup>b</sup> *videndi?*

Idem: *Cecropias innatus apes* <sup>a</sup> *amor urget* <sup>b</sup> *habendi.*

Idem: *Æneas celsa in puppi jam* <sup>a</sup> *certus* <sup>b</sup> *eundi.*

Poeticè infinitivus modus loco Gerundii ponitur: Nom.  
ut Virg. <sup>a</sup> *studium quibus arva* <sup>b</sup> *tueri.* <sup>a</sup> *Peritus* <sup>b</sup> *me-*  
*dicari.*

Interdum non inveniuntè adjicitur Gerundii vocibus  
etiam genitivus pluralis: ut, *Quum* <sup>b</sup> *illorum* <sup>a</sup> *videndi*  
*gratiâ me in forum contulissem.* Terent. *Date* <sup>a</sup> *crescen-*  
*di copiam* <sup>b</sup> *novarum.* *Concessa est* <sup>a</sup> *diripiendi* <sup>b</sup> *pomorum,*  
*atque opsoniorum licentia.*

Gerundia in *do* pendent ab his præpositionibus, *A, ab, De;*  
*abs, de, è, ex, cum, in, pro:* ut,

Cicero. *Ignavi* <sup>a</sup> *à* <sup>b</sup> *discendo citò deterrentur.*

*Amor & amicitia, utrumque* <sup>a</sup> *ab* <sup>b</sup> *amando dictum est.*

Cicer. <sup>a</sup> *Ex* <sup>b</sup> *defendendo, quàm* <sup>a</sup> *ex* <sup>b</sup> *accusando, uberior*  
*gloria comparatur. Consultatur* <sup>a</sup> *de* <sup>b</sup> *transeundo in Galliam.*

Quint. *Rectè scribendi ratio* <sup>a</sup> *cum* <sup>b</sup> *loquendo conjuncta est.*

Plaut. <sup>a</sup> *Pro* <sup>b</sup> *vapulando ab hoste mercedem petam.*

Ponuntur & absque præpositione: ut,

Virgil.—*alitur vitium, crescitque* <sup>b</sup> *regendo.*

<sup>b</sup> *scribendo disces scribere.*

Gerundia in *dum* pendent ab his præpositionibus, *Dum;*

*Inter, ante, ad, ob, propter:* ut, <sup>a</sup> *Inter* <sup>b</sup> *carnandum bi-*

*lares este.* Virg.—<sup>a</sup> *Ante* <sup>b</sup> *domandum Ingentes tollens*

*animos.* Cic. *Locus* <sup>a</sup> *ad* <sup>b</sup> *agendum amplissimus.*

Idem. <sup>a</sup> *Ob* <sup>b</sup> *absolvendum munus ne acceperis.*

*Veni* <sup>a</sup> *propter te* <sup>b</sup> *redimendum.*

Cùm significatur necessitas ponuntur citra præposi-  
tionem, addito verbo *Est:* ut,

Juven. <sup>a</sup> *Orandum est, ut sit mens sana, in corpore sano.*

<sup>a</sup> *Vigilandum est ei qui cupit vincere.*

Gerundia  
in nomi-  
na ver-  
tuntur.

Vertuntur gerundii voces in nomina adjectiva, ut,  
Virg. *Tantus amor florum*, & <sup>b</sup> generandi gloria <sup>a</sup> mellis.  
Ad <sup>b</sup> accusandos <sup>a</sup> homines duci præmio, proximum latro-  
cinio est. Cur adeo delectaris <sup>a</sup> criminibus <sup>b</sup> inferendis?

### ¶ De Supinis.

Prius  
Sup.

**P**rius supinum activè significat, & sequitur verbum,  
aut participium, significans motum ad locum: ut,  
Ovid. <sup>b</sup> Spectatum <sup>a</sup> veniunt, veniunt spectentur ut ipsæ.  
*Milites sunt* <sup>a</sup> missi <sup>b</sup> speculatum arcem.

Nota.

Illa verò, *Do venum*, *do filiam nuptum*, latentem  
habent motum.

Exceptio.

At hoc supinum in neutro-passivis, & cum infinito  
*iri*, passivè significat: ut Plaut.

<sup>b</sup> *Costum ego non* <sup>b</sup> vapulatum, dudum, <sup>a</sup> conductus sum.  
Ter. *Postquam* <sup>a</sup> audierat non <sup>b</sup> datum *iri uxorem filio*.  
Poeticè dicunt: <sup>a</sup> *Eo* <sup>b</sup> visere. <sup>a</sup> *Vado* <sup>b</sup> videre.

Nota.

Ponitur & absolutè cum verbo *Est*: ut,  
Terent. <sup>b</sup> *Actum est*, *ilicet*, *periisti*.

Ovid. — <sup>b</sup> *Itum est in viscera terræ*. <sup>b</sup> *Cessatum est satis*.

Posterius  
supinum.

Posterius supinum passivè significat, & sequitur no-  
mina adjectiva: ut, *Sum extra noxam*, *sed non est*  
<sup>a</sup> facile <sup>b</sup> purgatu. *Quod* <sup>b</sup> factu <sup>a</sup> fædum est, *idem est* &  
<sup>b</sup> dictu <sup>a</sup> turpe. *Qui pecuniâ non movetur*, *hunc* <sup>a</sup> dignum  
<sup>b</sup> spectatu arbitramur.

In istis verò, <sup>a</sup> *Surgit* <sup>b</sup> cubitu, <sup>a</sup> *Redit* <sup>b</sup> venatu: cubitu  
& venatu nomina potiùs censenda videntur, quàm supina.

### ¶ De Tempore & Loco.

#### TEMPUS.

Pars tem-  
poris.

**Q**uæ significant partem temporis, in ablativo fre-  
quentiùs usurpantur, in accusativo raro: ut,  
*Nemo mortalium omnibus* <sup>b</sup> horis <sup>a</sup> sapit. <sup>b</sup> *Nocte* <sup>a</sup> latent  
*menda*. <sup>b</sup> *Id tempus* <sup>a</sup> creatus est Consul.

Quanquam hic eclipsis videtur esse præpositionis per  
vel sub

Duratio  
temporis.

Quæ autem durationem temporis & continua-  
tionem



tionem denotant, in accusativo, interdum & in ablativo efferuntur: ut Virgil.

*Hic jam ter centum totos<sup>a</sup> regnabitur<sup>b</sup> annos.*

Idem. *Noces atque dies<sup>a</sup> patet atri janua Divi.*

Idem. *Hic tamen hac mecum poteris<sup>a</sup> requiescere<sup>b</sup> nocte.*

Suet. *Imperavit<sup>b</sup> triennio, & decem mensibus, octoque diebus.*

Dicimus etiam *In paucis<sup>b</sup> diebus.<sup>a</sup> De<sup>b</sup> die.<sup>a</sup> De<sup>b</sup> nocte.*

*Promitto<sup>a</sup> in<sup>b</sup> diem. Commodo<sup>a</sup> in<sup>b</sup> mensem.<sup>b</sup> Annos<sup>a</sup> ad quinquaginta natus.<sup>a</sup> Per tres<sup>b</sup> annos studui.*

*Puer<sup>b</sup> id ætatis. Non<sup>a</sup> plus<sup>b</sup> triduum, aut<sup>b</sup> triduo.*

*Terrio, vel<sup>a</sup> ad<sup>b</sup> tertium calendas, vel calendarum.*

## Spatium Loci.

Spatium loci in accusativo effertur, interdum & in ablativo: ut Virg.

Spatium  
loci.

*Dic quibus in terris ( & eris mihi magnus Apollo )*

*Tres<sup>a</sup> pateat cæli spatium, non ampliùs, <sup>b</sup> ulnas.*

*Fam mille<sup>b</sup> passus<sup>a</sup> processeram.<sup>a</sup> Abest bidui; subintelligitur<sup>b</sup> spatium vel<sup>b</sup> spatio; <sup>b</sup> itinere, vel<sup>b</sup> iter.*

*Abest ab urbe quingentis<sup>b</sup> millibus passuum.*

## Appellativa Locorum.

Nomina appellativa, & nomina majorum locorum adduntur fere cum præpositione verbis significantibus motum aut actionem in loco, ad locum, à loco, aut per locum: ut, *In foro<sup>a</sup> versatur.<sup>a</sup> Meruit sub rege<sup>b</sup> in Gallia. Virgil.—<sup>b</sup> ad templum non aquæ Palladis ibant<sup>a</sup> Iliades. Salust.<sup>a</sup> Legantur<sup>b</sup> in Hispaniam majores natu nobiles.<sup>b</sup> E Sicilia<sup>a</sup> discedens, Rhodū veni, per mare<sup>a</sup> ibi<sup>b</sup> ad Indas.*

Appellativa &  
regionum  
nomina.

Omne verbum admittit genitivum proprii nominis loci, in quo fit actio; modo primæ vel secundæ declinationis, & singularis numeri sit: ut, *Juven. Quid<sup>b</sup> Romæ<sup>a</sup> faciam? mentiri nescio.*

Urbium  
& oppi-  
dorum  
nomina.

*Terent. Samia mihi mater fuit, ea<sup>a</sup> habitabat<sup>b</sup> Rhodi.*

Hi genitivi, Humi, domi, militiæ, belli, propriorum sequun-

Humi,  
domi, &c.

sequuntur formam : ut, Ter.<sup>b</sup> Domi<sup>b</sup> bellique simul<sup>a</sup> viximus. Cic. Parvi sunt foris arma, nisi<sup>a</sup> est consilium<sup>b</sup> domi.

Domi.

Domi, non alios secum patitur genitivos, quam Mez, tuæ, suæ, nostræ, vestræ, alienæ : ut, Hecor<sup>a</sup> domi<sup>b</sup> mea, non<sup>b</sup> alienæ.

Verum si proprium loci nomen pluralis duntaxat numeri aut tertiæ declinationis fuerit, in dativo, aut ablativo ponitur : ut, Colchus an Assyrius, <sup>b</sup> Thebis<sup>a</sup> nutritus, an<sup>b</sup> Argis? Suet. Lentulum Getulicus<sup>b</sup> Tyburi<sup>a</sup> genitum scribit. Livius. <sup>a</sup> Neglectum<sup>b</sup> Anxuri præsidium. Cicero. Cum una sola legione<sup>a</sup> fuit<sup>b</sup> Carthagini.

Horat. <sup>b</sup> Romæ Tybur<sup>a</sup> amo ventosus, <sup>b</sup> Tybure Romam.

Cic. Quum tu<sup>b</sup> Narbone mensas hospitum<sup>a</sup> convomeres.

Idem. Commendo tibi domum ejus, quæ<sup>a</sup> est<sup>b</sup> Sicyone.

Nota.

Sic utimur Ruri vel Rure, in ablativo : ut, <sup>b</sup> Ruri fere se<sup>a</sup> continet. Pers.—<sup>b</sup> Rure paterno<sup>a</sup> Est tibi far modicum.

### Ad Locum.

Ad locum.

Verbis significantibus motum ad locum apponitur proprium loci, in accusativo : ut, <sup>a</sup> Concessi<sup>b</sup> Cantabrigiam ad capiendum ingenii cultum.

<sup>a</sup> Eo<sup>b</sup> Londinum ad merces emendas.

Ad hunc modum utimur rus & domus : ut, Ego<sup>b</sup> rus<sup>a</sup> ibo. Virg. <sup>a</sup> Ite<sup>b</sup> domum saturæ, venit Hesperus, ite capella.

### A Loco, per Locum.

A loco, per locum.

Verbis significantibus motum à loco, aut per locum, adjicitur proprium loci in ablativo : ut, Nisi antè<sup>b</sup> Romam<sup>a</sup> profectus esses, nunc eam relinqueres. <sup>b</sup> Eboraco ( five<sup>b</sup> per Eboracum ) <sup>a</sup> sum profecturus iter.

Ad eundem modum usurpantur domus & rus : ut, Nuper<sup>a</sup> exiit<sup>b</sup> domo. Ter. Timeo ne pater<sup>b</sup> rure<sup>a</sup> redierit.

### ¶ Impersonalium Constructio.

#### GENITIVUS.

HÆc tria impersonalia, Interest, refert, & est quibullibet genitivis annectuntur, præter hoc ab

ablativos foemininos. *Mea, tuâ, suâ, nostrâ, vestrâ & cuiâ:*  
*ut, a Interest b magistratûs tueri bonos, animadvertere in*  
*malos. a Refert multam Christiana b reipub. Episcopos do-*  
*ctos & pios esse. b Prudentis a est multa dissimulare. b Tuâ*  
*a refert teipsum nôsse. Cic. Ea cades crimini potissimum*  
*datur ei, b cuiâ a interfuit, non ei, cuiâ nihil interfuit.*

Adjiciuntur & illi genitivi, *Tanti, quanti, magni, parvi,*  
*quanticunque, tantidem: ut, b Magni a refert quibuscum*  
*vixeris. b Tanti a refert honesta agere. Vestrâ b parvi a in-*  
*terest. Et, a Interest ad laudem meam.*

## D A T I V U S.

In dativum feruntur hæc impersonalia, *Accidit, cer-*  
*tum est, contingit, constat, confert, competit, conducit,*  
*convenit, placet, displicet, dolet, expedit, evenit, liquet,*  
*libet, licet, nocet, obest, prodest, præstat, patet, stat, re-*  
*stat, benefit, malefit, fatisfit, superest, sufficit, vacat pro*  
*orium est: ut, a Convenit b mihi tecum. Salust. Emori per*  
*virtutem b mihi a præstat, quàm per dedecus vivere.*

*Ovid. Non a vacat exiguis rebus adesse b Fovi.*

*Ter. a Dolet dictum imprudenti b adolescenti & libero.*

*A noverca a malefit b privignis. A Deo b nobis a beneficit.*

*Virg. a Stat b mihi casus renovare omnes, id est statutum est.*

## A C C U S A T I V U S.

Hæc impersonalia accusandi casum exigunt, *Juvat,*  
*decet, cum compositis, delectat, oportet: ut, b Me*  
*a juvat ire per altum. b Uxorem ades curare a decet.*  
*a Dedecet b viros muliebriter rixari. Cato. b Patrem familias*  
*vendacem, non emacem esse a oportet.*

His verò, *Attinet, pertinet, spectat, propriè ad-*  
*ditur præpositio Ad: ut, Mene vis dicere, quod b ad te*  
*a attinet; a Spectat b ad omnes bene vivere.*

*Quint. a Pertinet b in utramque partem.*

His impersonalibus subjicitur accusativus cum genitivo:  
*pœnitet, cœdet, miseret, miserefcit, pudet, piget: ut,*

*Cic.*

Accusa-  
tiv. cum  
prap.

Accusa-  
tiv. cum  
genit.

Cic. *Si ad centesimum vixisset annum,* <sup>bb</sup> *senectutis* <sup>b</sup> *eum*  
*sua non* <sup>a</sup> *pemitteret.* <sup>a</sup> *Tædet* <sup>b</sup> *animam meam* <sup>bb</sup> *vita mea.*  
<sup>bb</sup> *Altorum* <sup>b</sup> *te* <sup>a</sup> *miseret;* <sup>bb</sup> *tui nec* <sup>a</sup> *miseret, nec pudet.*  
<sup>bb</sup> *Fratri* <sup>b</sup> *me quidem* <sup>a</sup> *piget, pudetque.*

Imper-  
sonalia si-  
unt per-  
sonalia.

Nonnulla impersonalia remigrant aliquando in per-  
sonalia: ut Virgil.

*Non omnes* <sup>a</sup> *arbuta* <sup>b</sup> *juvant, humilesque myricæ.*

Ovid. *Namque* <sup>b</sup> *decent animos mollia* <sup>a</sup> *regna tuos.*

Senec. *Agricolam* <sup>a</sup> *arbor ad frugem producta* <sup>b</sup> *delectat.*

<sup>a</sup> *Nemo miserorum* <sup>b</sup> *commiserescit.*

*Te non* <sup>b</sup> *pudet* <sup>a</sup> *istud?* *Non te* <sup>a</sup> *hæc* <sup>b</sup> *pudent?*

Cœpit,  
sic.

Cœpit, incipit, desinit, debet, solet, & potest, imper-  
sonalibus juncta, impersonalium formam induunt: ut,  
Quint. *Ubi primum* <sup>a</sup> *cœperat non* <sup>b</sup> *convenire, quæstio ori-*  
*ebatur.* Idem. <sup>b</sup> *Tædere* <sup>a</sup> *solet avaros impendii.* <sup>a</sup> *Desinit*  
*illum studii* <sup>b</sup> *tædere. Sacerdotem insctiæ* <sup>b</sup> *pudere* <sup>a</sup> *debet.*

Quin. <sup>b</sup> *Perveniri ad summum, nisi ex principis, non* <sup>a</sup> *potest.*

Verbum impersonale passivæ vocis, similem cum per-  
sonalibus passivis casum obtinet: ut,

Cæsar. <sup>b</sup> *Ab hostibus constanter* <sup>a</sup> *pugnatur.*

Qui quidem casus interdum non exprimitur: ut,  
Virgil.—*strato* <sup>a</sup> *discumbitur* <sup>b</sup> *astro.*

Verbum impersonale passivæ vocis, pro singulis  
personis utriusque numeri indifferenter accipi potest:  
ut, <sup>ab</sup> *Statur*: id est, *sto, stas, stat; stamus, statis, stant*: vide-  
licet ex vi adjuncti obliqui: ut, <sup>a</sup> *Statur* <sup>a</sup> *à me, id est, sto,*  
<sup>a</sup> *Statur* <sup>b</sup> *ab illis, id est, stant.*

## PARTICIPII CONSTRUCTIO.

**P**articipia regunt casus verborum à quibus deri-  
vantur: ut Virgil.—*Duplices* <sup>a</sup> *tendens ad sydera*  
<sup>b</sup> *palmas, Talia voce refert.*

Idem; *Ubera* <sup>b</sup> *lacte domum referent* <sup>a</sup> *distenta capellæ.*

<sup>a</sup> *Diligendus* <sup>b</sup> *ab omnibus.*

Quamvis in his usitator est dativus: ut,  
Terent. *Reffas Chremes, qui* <sup>b</sup> *mibi* <sup>a</sup> *exorandus est.*

## GENITIVUS.

Participiorum voces cum fiunt nomina, genitivum postulant: ut *Salust.* <sup>b</sup> *Alieni* <sup>a</sup> *appetens*, <sup>b</sup> *sui* <sup>a</sup> *profusus*. <sup>a</sup> *Cupientissimus* <sup>b</sup> *tui*. <sup>a</sup> *Inexpertus* <sup>b</sup> *belli*. <sup>a</sup> *Indoctus* <sup>b</sup> *pila*. Genitivus.

## ACCUSATIVUS.

*Exosus*, *perosus*, *pertæsus*, activè significant, & in accusativum feruntur: ut, *Immundam* <sup>b</sup> *segniitiem* <sup>a</sup> *perosa*: Accusativus.

*Astronomus* <sup>a</sup> *perosus* ad unum <sup>b</sup> *mulieres*.

*Sueton.* <sup>a</sup> *Pertæsus* <sup>b</sup> *ignaviam suam*.

*Exosus* & *perosus* etiam cum dandi casu leguntur, videlicet passivè significantia: ut, *Germani* <sup>b</sup> *Romanis* <sup>a</sup> *perosi sunt*. <sup>a</sup> *Exosus* <sup>b</sup> *Deo & sanctis*. Dativus.

## ABLATIVUS.

*Natus*, *prognatus*, *satus*, *cretus*, *creatus*, *ortus*, *editus*, in ablativum feruntur: ut *Ter.* *Bona bonis* <sup>a</sup> *prognata* <sup>b</sup> *parentibus*. *Virgil.*—*sate* <sup>b</sup> *sanguine divum*. Ablativus.

*Idem.*—*Quo* <sup>b</sup> *sanguine* <sup>a</sup> *cretus*? *Ovid.* *Venus* <sup>a</sup> *orta*

<sup>b</sup> *mari mare præstat eunti*. <sup>b</sup> *Terrâ* <sup>a</sup> *editus*.

## ADVERBII CONSTRUCTIO.

## NOMINATIVUS.

**E**N & ecce, demonstrandi adverbia, nominativo frequentius junguntur, accusativo rarius: ut, *Virgil.* <sup>a</sup> *En* <sup>b</sup> *Priamus*, *sunt hic etiam sua præmia laudi*. *Cic.* <sup>a</sup> *Ecce tibi* <sup>b</sup> *status noster*. *Virg.* <sup>a</sup> *En* <sup>b</sup> *quatuor aras*: <sup>a</sup> *Ecce duo tibi Daphni*, *duoque* <sup>b</sup> *altaria Phæbo*.

*En* & ecce exprobrantis, soli accusativo neſtuntur: ut, <sup>a</sup> *En* <sup>b</sup> *animum & mentem*: *Juven.* <sup>a</sup> *En* <sup>b</sup> *habitum*, *Terent.* <sup>a</sup> *Ecce autem* <sup>b</sup> *alterum*.

## GENITIVUS.

Quedam adverbia loci, temporis, & quantitatis, genitivum post se recipiunt.

*Idem*:

Loci.

Loci : ut ubi, ubinam, nusquam, eò, longè, quò, ubi-  
vis, huc, illuc : ut, <sup>a</sup> Ubi <sup>b</sup> gentium ? <sup>a</sup> Quo <sup>b</sup> terrarum abiit ?  
<sup>a</sup> Nusquam <sup>b</sup> loci invenitur. <sup>a</sup> Eò <sup>b</sup> impudentia ventum est.  
Ter. Ab <sup>a</sup> minime <sup>b</sup> gentium, non faciam. Hic genitivus  
<sup>a</sup> gentium festivitatis causâ additur.

Genit.  
festivi-  
tatis.Tempo-  
ris.

Temporis : ut, Nunc, tunc, tum, interea, pridie, po-  
stridie : ut, Nihil <sup>a</sup> tunc <sup>b</sup> temporis amplius quam flere  
poteram. <sup>a</sup> Pridie <sup>b</sup> ejus <sup>b</sup> diei pugnam inierunt. <sup>a</sup> Pridie  
<sup>b</sup> calendarum, seu <sup>b</sup> calendas.

Quanti-  
tatis.

Quantitatis : ut, Parum, satis, abundè, &c. ut, <sup>a</sup> Satis <sup>b</sup> elo-  
quentia, <sup>b</sup> sapientia <sup>a</sup> parum. <sup>a</sup> Abundè <sup>b</sup> fabularum audivi-  
mus.

Instar.

Instar, æquiparationem, mensuram, aut similitudinem  
significat : ut, Virg. <sup>a</sup> Instar <sup>b</sup> montis equum divina Pal-  
ladi arte <sup>a</sup> Edificant : Mittitur Philippus solus, in quo  
<sup>a</sup> instar omnium <sup>b</sup> auxiliorum erat.

Ovid. Sed scelus hoc <sup>b</sup> meriti pondus <sup>a</sup> instar habet.

Dica.

Hic apponitur interdum præpositio Ad : ut, Vallis <sup>a</sup> ad  
instar <sup>b</sup> castrorum clauditur.

Populus Romanus è parva origine <sup>a</sup> ad tanta <sup>b</sup> magnitu-  
dinis <sup>a</sup> instar emicuit.

## D A T I V U S.

Quædam dativum admittunt nominum unde dedu-  
cta sunt : ut, Venit <sup>a</sup> obviam <sup>b</sup> illi. Nam obvius illi dici-  
tur. Canit <sup>a</sup> similiter <sup>b</sup> huic. Et, <sup>b</sup> Sibi <sup>a</sup> inutiliter vivit.  
<sup>a</sup> Propinquius <sup>b</sup> tibi sedet, quam mihi.

Dat. ad-  
verbial.

Sunt & hi dativi adverbiales : Tempori, luci, ves-  
peri : ut, <sup>b</sup> Tempori <sup>a</sup> venit, quod omnium rerum est primum.  
<sup>b</sup> Luci <sup>a</sup> occidit hominem. Vidi ad vos <sup>a</sup> afferri <sup>b</sup> vesperi.

## A C C U S A T I V U S.

Sunt quæ accusandi casum admittunt præpositionis  
unde sunt profecta : ut,  
Castra <sup>a</sup> propius <sup>b</sup> urbem moventur.

Salust. <sup>a</sup> Proximè <sup>b</sup> Hispaniam sunt Mauri.

Cedo.

Cedo, flagrantis exhiberi, accusativum regit : ut,  
Terent. <sup>a</sup> Cedo quemvis <sup>b</sup> arbitrium.

A B L A.



## ABLATIVUS.

Adverbia diversitatis, *Aliter, secus*; & illa duo, *Antè, post*, cum ablativo non raro inveniuntur: ut, *b Multo a aliter. b Paulo a secus. b Multo a antè. Longè secus. Virg.—longo a post b tempore venit. b Paulo a post.* Nisi & ipsa adverbia potius censenda sunt.

Adverbia comparativi & superlativi gradus, admittunt casus comparativis & superlativis assuetos subferre, sicut ante præceptum est: ut, *Accessit a propius b illo. a Optime b omnium dixit. Cic. Legimus. a Propius b ad deos, & a Propius b a terris.*

Plūs nominativo, genitivo, accusativo, & ablativo Plūs junctum reperitur: ut *Liv. Paulò a plūs trecenta b vehicula sunt amissa.*

*Idem. b Hominum eo die caesa a plūs duo millia. a Plūs quàm quinquaginta b hominum ceciderunt: Abierat acies paulò a plus quingentos b passus. Terent. Dies trigin, a, aut a plus b eo, in nave su?*

## Quibus verborum modis, quæ congruant Adverbia.

Ubi, postquam, & cùm, temporis adverbia, interdum *Ubi*, indicativis, interdum verò subjunctivis verbis apponuntur: ut *Virgil. Hæc a ubi dicta b dedit.* *Terent. a Ubi nos b laverimus, si voles, lavato.* *Virgil. a Cùm faciam vitula pro frugibus, ipse venito.* *Idem. a Cùm b canerem reges & praelia, Cymbius aurem vellit. Hic prius adverbium, posterius conjunctio esse videtur.*

*Donec pro quamdiu, indicativo gaudet: ut Ovid. Donec, a Donec b eram sospes.* *Idem. a Donec b eris felix, multos numerabis amicos.*

Pro Quousque, nunc indicativum nunc subjunctivum exigit: ut *Virg. Cogere a donec oves stabulis, numerumque referre b Fuisse. Colum. a Donec ea aqua quam adjeceris decocta b sit.*

Dum

**Dum.**

Dum, de re præsenti non perfectâ, aut pro Quamdiu, fatendi modum poscit: ut,

Terent. <sup>a</sup> *Dum* <sup>b</sup> *apparatur virgo in conclavi.*

Idem. Ego te meum dici tantisper volo, <sup>a</sup> *dum* <sup>b</sup> *quod te dignum est* <sup>b</sup> *facis.*

Dum pro dummodo, aliàs potentiali, aliàs subjunctivo nectitur: ut, <sup>a</sup> *Dum* <sup>b</sup> *prosim tibi.*

<sup>a</sup> *Dum* <sup>b</sup> *ne ab hoc me falli* <sup>b</sup> *comperiam.*

Dum pro donec subjunctivo tantum: ut,

Virgil. *Tertia* <sup>a</sup> *dum* <sup>b</sup> *Latio regnantem* <sup>b</sup> *viderit aëtas.*

**Quoad.**

Quoad pro quamdiu, vel indicativis vel subjunctivis; pro donec, subjunctivis solis adhibetur: ut, <sup>a</sup> *Quoad* <sup>b</sup> *expectas contubernalem?* Cic. <sup>a</sup> *Quoad* <sup>b</sup> *possem* <sup>b</sup> *et* <sup>b</sup> *liseret,* <sup>b</sup> *ab ejus latere nunquam discederem.*

*Omnia integra servabo,* <sup>a</sup> *quoad* <sup>b</sup> *exercitus hic* <sup>b</sup> *mittatur.*

**Simulac.**

Simulac, simulatque, indicativo & subjunctivo adhaerent: ut, <sup>a</sup> *Simulac* <sup>b</sup> *belli patiens* <sup>b</sup> *erat.*

Virgil. — <sup>a</sup> *Simulatque* <sup>b</sup> *adoleverit aëtas.*

**Quemadmodum, &c.**

Quemadmodum, ut, utcumque, sicut, utrumque modum admittunt: ut Eras. <sup>a</sup> *Ut* <sup>b</sup> *salutabis, ita* <sup>b</sup> *et* <sup>b</sup> *resalutaberis.* Horat. <sup>a</sup> *Ut* <sup>b</sup> *sementem* <sup>b</sup> *feceris, ita* <sup>b</sup> *et* <sup>b</sup> *metes.*

Ut pro postquam indicativo jungitur, ut, <sup>a</sup> *Ut* <sup>b</sup> *ventum est in urbem.*

**Quasi, &c.**

Quasi, ceu, tanquam, perinde ac si, haud secus ac si, quum proprium habent verbum, subjunctivo apponuntur: ut, <sup>a</sup> *Tanquam* <sup>b</sup> *feceris ipse aliquid.*

Terent. <sup>a</sup> *Quasi non* <sup>b</sup> *norimus nos inter nos.*

Aliàs copulant consimiles casus: ut, *Novi* <sup>b</sup> *hominem* <sup>a</sup> *tanquam* <sup>b</sup> *te. Arridet* <sup>b</sup> *mibi,* <sup>a</sup> *quasi* <sup>b</sup> *amico.*

**Ne.**

Ne prohibendi, vel imperativis, vel subjunctivis praepositur: ut Virgil. <sup>a</sup> *Ne* <sup>b</sup> *sævi magna sacerdos.*

Terent. *Hic nebulo magnus est,* <sup>a</sup> *ne* <sup>b</sup> *metuas.*

Ne pro non, cæteris modis inservit.

**Adver. Propositionum firmam induunt.**

Adverbia, accedente casu, transeunt in præpositiones ut, Juven. *Cantabit vacuus* <sup>a</sup> *coram* <sup>b</sup> *latrone viator.*

## DE CONJUNCTIONUM

Constructione.

**C**onjunctiones copulativæ & disjunctivæ, cum his quatuor, quàm, nisi, præterquam, an, similes orationis casus nectunt: ut, *Socrates docuit Xenophontem & Platonem. Utinam calidus esses aut frigidus. Albus an ater homo sit, nescio. Est minor natu quàm tu, Nemini placet nisi (vel præterquam) sibi.*

Conjunctiones:  
copulativæ  
similes  
casus.

Excepto si casualis dictionis ratio aliqua privata repugnet, vel aliud poscat: ut,

Exceptio.

*Emi librum centussi pluris. vixi Romæ & Veneriis. Hor. in Metii descendat iudicis aures. Et patris nostras.*

Conjunctiones copulativæ & disjunctivæ, aliquoties similes modos & tempora conglutinant: ut, *Recto stat corpore, despiciatque terras.*

Aliquoties autem similes modos, sed diversa tempora: ut *Ter. Nisi me lassasses amantem, & vani spe produceres. Tibi gratias egi, & te aliquando collaudare possum.*

*Etsi, tametsi, etiamsi, quanquam, in principio orationis indicativos modos; in medio subjunctivos sæpius postulant. Quamvis & licet, subjunctivos frequentius: ut, Etsi nihil novi afferebatur. Quanquam animus meminisse horret.*

Etsi, tametsi, etiamsi.

*Virgil. Quamvis Elysios miretur Græcia campos.*

*Ovid. Ipse licet venias Mævis comitatus, Nomere,*

*Nil tamen attuleris, ibis, Homere, foras.*

*Ni, nisi, si, siquidem, quòd, quia, quàm, postquam, posteaquam, ubi pro postquam, nunquam, priusquam & indicativis & subjunctivis adherent: ut, Quod redieris incolumis, gaudeo. Castigo te, non quòd odio habeam, sed quòd amem. Aliud honestum iudicas, quàm Philosophi statuunt. Plin. Gravius accusas, quàm patitur tua consuetudo.*

Ni, nisi, &c.

*Si, utrique modo jungitur: at Si pro Quamvis, subjunctivo tantum: ut, Ter. Redeam? non me obsecrat.*

M

Siquis

*Siquis*, tantum indicativo : ut, <sup>a</sup> *Siquis* <sup>b</sup> *adeff.*  
 Quando, Quandoquidem, quoniam, indicativo jun-  
 guntur : ut,

Virg. *Dicite* ( <sup>a</sup> *quandoquidem in molli* <sup>b</sup> *confedimus verba* )

<sup>a</sup> *Quoniam mihi non* <sup>b</sup> *credis, ipse facito periculum.*

Quippe. Quippe, cum proprium habet verbum, gaudet  
 indicativo : ut, *Danda est huic venia*, <sup>a</sup> *quippe* <sup>b</sup> *agro-*  
*rat.* Si addideris Qui, utrumque admittit modum : ut,  
*Non est huic danda venia*, <sup>a</sup> *quippe qui jam bis* <sup>b</sup> *pejeravit*  
*sive* <sup>b</sup> *pejeraverit.*

Qui. Qui, cum habet vim causalem, subjunctivum postulat :  
 ut, *Stultus es* <sup>a</sup> *qui huic* <sup>b</sup> *credas.*

Cum. Cum pro quamvis, pro quandoquidem vel quoniam,  
 subjunctivis semper adhæret : ut,  
 Cicero. *Nos* <sup>a</sup> *cum præcipi nihil posse* <sup>b</sup> *dicamus, tamen*  
*aliis de rebus disserere solemus.*

Virg. <sup>a</sup> *Cum* <sup>b</sup> *sis officiis Grædive virilibus aptus.*

Cum & Tum. Cum & Tum, item tum geminatum, similes modos  
 copulant. Est autem in Cum quiddam minus, atque  
 ideo in priore clausula parte statuitur : in Tum quiddam  
 majus, ac proinde in posteriore clausula parte collocatur :  
 ut, <sup>b</sup> *Amplectitur* <sup>a</sup> *cum eruditos omnes,* <sup>a</sup> *tum imprimis*  
*Marcellum.* <sup>b</sup> *Odit* <sup>a</sup> *tum literas,* <sup>a</sup> *tum virtutem.*

Ne, an, num. Ne, an, num, interrogandi particula, indicativum  
 amant : ut Virg. <sup>b</sup> *Superat* <sup>a</sup> *ne* <sup>c</sup> *vescitur aurâ* <sup>d</sup> *E-*  
*thereâ ?*

At cum accipiuntur dubitativè aut indefinitè, subjun-  
 ctivum postulant : ut, *Vise* <sup>a</sup> *num* <sup>b</sup> *redierit.*

*Nihil refert* <sup>b</sup> *feceris* <sup>a</sup> *ne,* <sup>a</sup> *an* <sup>b</sup> *persuaseris.*

Ut. Ut, causalis seu perfectiva conjunctio, & ut pro ne  
 non, post verba temporis, nunc potentiali, nunc subjun-  
 ctivo jungitur : ut Terentius,

*Filium perduxere illuc secum,* <sup>a</sup> *ut una* <sup>b</sup> *esset meum.*

Idem. *Te oro Dave,* <sup>a</sup> *ut* <sup>b</sup> *redeat jam in viam.*

Idem. *Metuo* <sup>a</sup> *ut* <sup>b</sup> *subster hospes, id est, ne non subster.*

Ut, consentis, seu positum pro quanquam, & ut  
 pro utpote, subjunctivo servit : ut,

<sup>a</sup> *Ut omnia* <sup>b</sup> *contingant quæ volo, levare non possum.*  
*Non est tibi fidendum,* <sup>a</sup> *ut qui toties* <sup>b</sup> *sefellere.* <sup>a</sup> *Ut*  
*qui solus reliqtus* <sup>b</sup> *fuert.*

*Ut pro Postquam, pro Quemadmodum, vel Sicut,*  
 & interrogativum, indicativis nequitur: ut Cicer.

<sup>a</sup> *Ut ab urbe* <sup>b</sup> *discessi, nullum intermisi diem quin scriberem.*  
*Terent. Tu tamen has nuptias perge facere,* <sup>a</sup> *ut* <sup>b</sup> *fack.*

*Idem. Credo* <sup>a</sup> *ut* <sup>b</sup> *est dementia.*

*Virg. Ut* <sup>b</sup> *valet?* <sup>a</sup> *Ut* <sup>b</sup> *meminit nostri?*

Quamquam de hoc in adverbii quoque constructione paulo supra est dictum.

## PRÆPOSITIONUM

## Constructio.

**P**ræpositio subaudita, interdum facit, ut addatur ablativus: ut, *Habeo te* <sup>ab</sup> *loco parentis, id est,* <sup>a</sup> *in* <sup>b</sup> *lo-*  
*co. Apparuit illi humanâ* <sup>ab</sup> *specie, id est,* <sup>a</sup> *sub humanâ*  
<sup>b</sup> *specie. Discessi* <sup>ab</sup> *magistratu, id est,* <sup>a</sup> *à* <sup>b</sup> *magistratu.*

Præpositio in compositione eundem nonnunquam casum regit quem & extra compositionem regebat: ut,

*Virg. Nec posse* <sup>b</sup> *Italiâ Teucrorum* <sup>a</sup> *avertere regem*

<sup>a</sup> *Prætereo* <sup>b</sup> *te insulam tuam.*

*Idem.—* <sup>a</sup> *emoti procumbunt* <sup>b</sup> *cardine postes.*

*Idem. Ut* *Detrudunt naves* <sup>b</sup> *scopulo.*

Verba composita cum A, ab, ad, con, de, è, ex, in, Verba  
 nonnunquam repetunt easdem præpositiones cum suo composita cum A,  
 casu extra compositionem, idque eleganter: ut, <sup>a</sup> *Ab-*  
<sup>b</sup> *stinuerunt* <sup>b</sup> *à viris. Terent. Amicos* <sup>a</sup> *advocabo* <sup>b</sup> *ad hanc*  
*rem. Cum legibus* <sup>a</sup> *conferemus.*

*Cic. Ut* *Detrahere* <sup>b</sup> *de tua fama nunquam cogitavi. Cum*  
<sup>b</sup> *ex insidiis* <sup>a</sup> *evaseris. Terent. Postquam* <sup>a</sup> *excessu* <sup>b</sup> *ex*  
*ephebi.* <sup>b</sup> *In Republicam cogitatione curâque* <sup>a</sup> *intumbe.*

In, pro Erga, contra, & ad, accusativum habet: ut, In eum

*Virg. Accipit* <sup>a</sup> *in* <sup>b</sup> *Teucros animum mentemque benignam. Accusa-*

*Idem. Quid meus* *Eneas* <sup>a</sup> *in* <sup>b</sup> *te committere tantum,* <sup>pro.</sup>

*Quid Troes potuere?*

M 2

Idem

Idem. *Quò te Mæri pedes? an quò via ducit?* <sup>a</sup> in <sup>b</sup> urbem?

Idem cum accusativo jungitur, quoties divisio, mutatio, aut incrementum rei cum tempore significatur: ut, *Virg. Estque locus* <sup>b</sup> *partis ubi se via findit* <sup>a</sup> in *ambas.*

*Ovid. Versa est* <sup>a</sup> in <sup>b</sup> *cineres sospite Troja viro.*

— *amor mihi crescit* <sup>a</sup> in <sup>b</sup> *horas.*

In cum  
ablative.

In, cum significatur actus in loco, ablativum postulat: ut *Ovid. Scilicet ut fulvum spectatur* <sup>a</sup> in <sup>b</sup> *ignibus aurum.*

Sub cum  
accusati-  
vo.

Sub pro Ad, per & ante, accusativo innitur: ut, <sup>a</sup> *Sub* <sup>b</sup> *umbram properemus.* *Liv. Legati ferè* <sup>a</sup> sub *id* <sup>b</sup> *tempus ad res repetendas missi;* id est, <sup>a</sup> per *id* <sup>b</sup> *tempus.*

Sub cum  
ablative.

*Virg.* — <sup>a</sup> sub <sup>b</sup> *noctem cura recursat,* id est, *Paulò* <sup>a</sup> ante <sup>b</sup> *noctem,* vel *instante nocte.* Aliàs ablativum admittit: ut, *Quicquid* <sup>a</sup> sub <sup>b</sup> *terrâ est,* in *apricum proferet ætas.*

*Virg.* — <sup>a</sup> sub <sup>b</sup> *noctè silenti;* id est, <sup>a</sup> in <sup>b</sup> *noctè silenti.*

Super  
cum ac-  
cusative.

Super pro Ultra, accusativo jungitur: ut *Virg.*

— <sup>a</sup> *Super* <sup>b</sup> *Garamantas & Indos Proferet imperium.*

Super  
cum ab-  
lative.

Super pro De & in ablativo: ut *Tacit. Multus* <sup>a</sup> super *ea* <sup>b</sup> *re variisque rumor.* *Virg.* <sup>b</sup> *Fronde* <sup>a</sup> super *viridi.*

Subter.

Subter uno significato utrique casui apud authores jungitur: ut *Liv. Pugnatum est super* <sup>a</sup> *subterque* <sup>b</sup> *terras.* *Virg.* — *Omnes Ferre libet* <sup>a</sup> subter <sup>b</sup> *densâ testudine casus.*

Tenus.

Tenus gaudet ablativo & singulari & plurali: ut, <sup>b</sup> *Pube* <sup>a</sup> *tenus.* <sup>b</sup> *Pectoribus* <sup>a</sup> *tenus.* At genitivo tantum plurali: ut, <sup>b</sup> *Criurum* <sup>a</sup> *tenus.*

Præposi-  
tiones  
migrant  
in ad-  
verbia.

Præpositiones cum casum amittunt, migrant in adverbia: ut *Virg.* — *longo* <sup>a</sup> *post tempore venit.*

Idem. <sup>a</sup> *Ponè subito conjux, ferimur per opaca locorum.*

Idem. — <sup>a</sup> *coram quem quæritis adsum Troius & Eneas.*

## INTERJECTIONUM

— Constructio.

Interjectiones non rarò absolutè, & sine casu ponuntur: ut *Virgilius.*

*Spem gregis* ( <sup>a</sup> *ah!* ) *silice in nuda commixa reliquit.*

*Terent. Quæ* ( <sup>a</sup> *malum!* ) *dementia?*



O exclamantis, nominativo, accusativo, & vocativo jungitur: ut, <sup>a</sup> O <sup>b</sup> festus <sup>b</sup> dies hominis!

Virg. <sup>a</sup> O fortunatos nimium, bona si sua norint, <sup>b</sup> Agricolas!

Idem. <sup>a</sup> O formose <sup>b</sup> puer, nimium ne crede colori.

Heu & Pro, nunc nominativo, nunc accusativo adherent: ut, <sup>a</sup> Heu <sup>b</sup> Pietas! Virg. <sup>a</sup> Heu prisca <sup>b</sup> fides!

Idem. <sup>a</sup> Heu <sup>b</sup> stirpem invisam.

Terent. <sup>a</sup> Pro <sup>b</sup> Jupiter! tu homo adiges me ad insaniam.

Idem. <sup>a</sup> Pro deum atque hominum <sup>b</sup> fidem!

<sup>a</sup> Proh sancte <sup>b</sup> Jupiter! apud Plaut.

Hei & va, dativo apponuntur: ut,

Ovid. <sup>a</sup> Hei <sup>b</sup> mihi quod nullis amor est medicabilis herbis!

Terent. <sup>a</sup> Va misero <sup>b</sup> mihi quanta de spe decidi.

## DE FIGURIS.

**F**igura est novata arte aliqua dicendi forma.

Cujus duo tantum genera, Dictionis scilicet & quid sit constructionis, hoc loco trademus.

## FIGURÆ DITIONIS.

Figuræ dictionis sunt sex.  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Prothesis,} \\ \text{Aphæresis,} \end{array} \right. \left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Epenthesis,} \\ \text{Syncope,} \end{array} \right. \left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Paragoge,} \\ \text{Apocope.} \end{array} \right.$

Prothesis, est appositio literæ vel syllabæ ad principium dictionis: ut, *Gnatus pro natus. Terenti pro tuli.* Prothesis.

Aphæresis, est ablatio literæ vel syllabæ à principio dictionis: ut, *Ruit pro eruit. Temnere pro contemnere.* Aphæresis.

Epenthesis, est interpositio literæ vel syllabæ in medio dictionis: ut, *Reliquias, religio, addita l; Induperatorem pro Imperatorem.* Epenthesis.

Syncope, est ablatio literæ vel syllabæ è medio dictionis: ut, *Abiit, petiit, dixit, repositum, &c.* Syncope.

Paragoge, est appositio literæ vel syllabæ ad finem dictionis: ut, *Dicier pro dici.* Paragoge.

Apocope, est ablatio literæ vel syllabæ à fine dictionis: ut, *Peculi pro peculiis. Dixit pro dixitine. Ingeni pro Ingenii.* Apocope.

## FIGURÆ CONSTRUCTIONIS.

Figuræ constructionis sunt octo. Appositio, Evocatio, Syllepsis, Prolepsis, Zeugma, Synthesis, Antiphrasis, Synecdoche.

## APPOSITIO.

Appositio quid sit.

**A**ppositio, est duorum substantivorum ejusdem casus, quorum altero declaratur alterum, continuata sive immediata conjunctio: ut, <sup>a</sup> *Flumen* <sup>b</sup> *Rhenus*. Potest autem Appositio plurium substantivorum esse: ut, <sup>a</sup> *Marcus* <sup>b</sup> *Tullius* <sup>bb</sup> *Cicero*.

Interdum apud authores in diversis casibus ponuntur substantiva, perinde quasi ad diversa pertinerent: ut, <sup>a</sup> *Urbs* <sup>b</sup> *Patevit*: apud Virgilium. <sup>a</sup> *Urbs* <sup>b</sup> *Antiochia*: apud Ciceronem.

In Appositione, substantiva non semper ejusdem generis aut numeri inveniuntur. Nam quoties alterum substantivorum caret numero singulari, aut est nomen collectivum, diversorum numerorum esse possunt: ut, <sup>a</sup> *Urbs* <sup>b</sup> *Athena*.

Ovid. *In me* <sup>b</sup> *turba ruunt luxuriosa* <sup>a</sup> *proci*.

Virg. *Ignarum* <sup>b</sup> *fucos* <sup>a</sup> *pecua* <sup>a</sup> *præsepibus arcent*.

## Triplici nomine fit Appositio.

Restringendæ generalitatis gratiâ: ut, <sup>a</sup> *Urbs* <sup>b</sup> *Roma*.  
<sup>a</sup> *Animal* <sup>b</sup> *equus*.

Tollendæ æquivocationis causâ: ut, <sup>a</sup> *Taurus* <sup>b</sup> *montis Asia*. <sup>a</sup> *Lupus* <sup>b</sup> *piscis*.

Et ad proprietatem attribuendam: ut, <sup>a</sup> *Erasmus* <sup>b</sup> *vir exactissimo judicio*. <sup>a</sup> *Nereus* <sup>b</sup> *adolescens insigni formâ*. <sup>a</sup> *Timotheus* <sup>b</sup> *homo incredibili fortunâ*.

## EVOCATIO.

Evocatio quid sit.

**C**UM prima vel secunda persona immediate ad se evocat tertiam, ambæ sunt primæ vel secundæ personæ: ut, <sup>a</sup> *Ego* <sup>b</sup> *pauper laboro*. <sup>a</sup> *Tu* <sup>b</sup> *dives ludo*.

Est ergo Evocatio, immediata tertiæ personæ ad primam vel secundam reductio.

Observandum verò est, Verbum semper convenire cum personæ evocante: ut, <sup>a</sup> *Ego pauper* <sup>b</sup> *laboro*; <sup>a</sup> *Tu dives* <sup>b</sup> *ludis*. Nam in Evocatione quatuor sunt notanda: Persona evocans, quæ semper est primæ vel secundæ; Evocata, quæ semper est tertiæ; Verbum, quod semper est primæ vel secundæ personæ; & Absentia conjunctionis. In Evocatione persona Evocans & Evocata aliquando sunt diversorum numerorum, utpote, vel cum persona evocata caret numero singulari: ut, <sup>a</sup> *Ego tuæ* <sup>b</sup> *deliciæ istuc veniam*. Aut cum est nomen collectivum: ut, *Magna* <sup>a</sup> *pars studiosorum amantissimas* <sup>b</sup> *quarimus*: hic subauditur *nos*. Aut denique cum est nomen distributivum: ut, *In magnis* <sup>b</sup> *lasi rebus* <sup>a</sup> *utergo* <sup>b</sup> *sumus*: subintelligitur *nos*.

Notanda  
quatuor.

Duplex autem est Evocatio: Explicita, ubi tam persona evocans, quam evocata exprimitur; & Implicita, ubi persona evocans subintelligitur: ut, <sup>a</sup> *Sum pius* <sup>b</sup> *Aeneas*: subintelligitur, *Ego*. <sup>a</sup> *Populus* <sup>b</sup> *superamur ab uno*: subauditur, *Nos*.

Evocatio  
duplex.

## SYLLEPSIS.

Syllepsis, seu conceptio, est comprehensio indignioris sub digniore, a *con*, & *syn* sumo. Syllepsis quid sit

Duplex autem est conceptio: Personarum scilicet, quoties persona concipitur cum persona; & Generum, quoties genus indignius cum genere digniore concipitur: Cujus declarandæ rei gratiâ, hæc quæ sequuntur observabis.

Copulatum per conjunctionem Et, nec, neque, & Cum pro Et acceptum, est pluralis numeri; ac proinde verbum aut adjectivum aut relativum exigit plurale. Quod quidem verbum aut adjectivum aut relativum genere & personâ cum digniore supposito ac substantivo quadrabit ut, *Quid* <sup>a</sup> *tu* <sup>b</sup> *scis* <sup>c</sup> *facis*?

Nota:

• Ego & mater, b miseri b perimus.

• Tu & uxor b qui b adfuisse, testes estote.

### Conceptio Personarum.

Dignior  
Personæ.

Dignior autem est persona prima quàm secunda aut tertia, & dignior secunda quàm tertia : ut, • Ego & pater b sumus in tuto. • Tu atque frater b estis in pericula. Neque • ego neque tu b sapimus.

Virgil. — b atvellimur inde Iobitus & Pelias • mecum.

Idem. • Rhemus cum fratre Quirino Jura b dabant.

Cum.

Cum tamen singulare verbum magis amat : ut, Tu quid ego & • populus mecum b desideret, aud.

### Conceptio Generum.

Dignius  
genus.

Dignius etiam est masculinum genus quàm foemininum aut neutrum : & dignius foemininum quàm neutrum : ut, • Rex & Regina b beati. • Chalybs & aurum sunt in fornace b probati. Hinc per vim • leges & plebiscita b coactæ.

Exceptio.

At cum substantiva res inanimatas significant, adjectivum aut relativum ultatius in neutro genere ponitur ut Virg. — cum Daphnidis • arcum

Fregisti & • calamos, b quæ tu, perverse Menalca,

Et cum vidisti puero bb donata dolebas.

Salust. • Ira & • aegritudo b permixta sunt. Idem. Huic

• bella civilia • caedes & • discordia civilis b grata fuerunt.

• Virga tua, & • baculus tuus, b ipsa me bb consolata sunt.

Conceptio  
duplex.

Porro conceptio, aliàs Directa est, nempe cum concipiens, id est, dignius, & conceptum, id est, indignius copulantur per Et, vel atque, vel que : aliàs Indirecta, cum copulantur per Cum : ut, • Ego cum fratre b sumus candidi : ubi utraque Conceptio est indirecta.

Syllepsis  
implicita.

Est etiam quædam Conceptio generum implicita ; nempe quando nec genus concipiens, nec genus conceptum explicatur, sed de mare atque foemina perinde loquimur ac de solo mare : ut si dicam, • Uterque est b formosus, loquens de sponso & sponsa.

Sic

Sic Ovid. <sup>b</sup> *Impliciti laqueis nudus* <sup>a</sup> *uterque jacet*: loquens de Marte & Venere, reti implicitis à Vulcano.

## PROLEPSIS.

**P**rolepsis seu præsumptio, est pronuntiatio quædam Prolep-  
rerum summaria. Fit autem cum congregatio sive <sup>sis</sup>  
totum cum verbo vel adjectivo aptè cohæret; deinde  
partes totius ad idem verbum vel adjectivum reducuntur,  
cum quo tamen ferè non concordant: ut, <sup>a</sup> *Dua aquila*  
<sup>b</sup> *volaverunt*; <sup>ab</sup> *hæc à oriente*, <sup>ab</sup> *illa ab occidente*. Hic  
congregatio sive totum, *Dua aquila*, cum verbo *volave-*  
*runt*, per omnia concordat: cum quo partes, *hæc & illa*  
ad idem verbum relatz, in numero non concordant.  
Congregatio sive totum, est dictio pluralis numeri, ut  
*Dua aquila*: aut plurali æquivalens; ut, *Corydon & Thyrsis*. Nota.

Nam copulatum æquivalet plurali: ut Virg.

<sup>b</sup> *Compulerantque greges* <sup>a</sup> *Corydon & Thyrsis in unum*.

<sup>ab</sup> *Thyrsis oves*, <sup>ab</sup> *Corydon dissentas lacte capellas*.

Aut congregatio est nomen collectivum: ut,

<sup>a</sup> *Populus* <sup>b</sup> *vivit*, <sup>ab</sup> *alii in penuria*, <sup>ab</sup> *alii in deliciis*.

Sulpitius & Aldus quinque dicunt in Prolepfi esse ne-  
cessaria. Congregationem, ut in priore exemplo, *due*  
*aquila*: verbum, ut, *volaverunt*: partes, ut, *hæc & illa*:  
Partium determinationem, ut, *ab oriente & occidente*:  
& ordinem, videlicet quòd totum præcedat, partes se-  
quantur.

Quinque  
in pro-  
lepfi ne-  
cessaria.

Duplex autem est Prolepsis: Explicita, ubi omnia ex-  
primuntur, quæ in Prolepfi esse oportet: ut, <sup>a</sup> *Equi*  
<sup>b</sup> *concurrunt*: <sup>ab</sup> *hic à dextrâ*, <sup>ab</sup> *ille à sinistrâ Hippodromi*:  
& Implicita, in qua aliquid tacetur: ut Ovid.

Prolepfi  
duplex.

<sup>ab</sup> *Alter in alterius* <sup>a</sup> *jactantes lumina vultus*,

<sup>b</sup> *Quærebant taciti noster ubi esset amor*:

Deest altera partium cum determinatione, videlicet,  
<sup>b</sup> *ab alter in alterius*. Et <sup>ab</sup> *Alter alterius onera* <sup>b</sup> *portare*.  
Ubi deest <sup>a</sup> *vor*: & altera pars cum determinatione, vi-  
delicet. Et <sup>ab</sup> *alter alterius*.

Ter, <sup>a</sup> *Curemus aquam* <sup>b</sup> *uterque partem*: hic totum <sup>a</sup> *nos*

sub-

subintelligitur, & partes, *alter & alter*, includuntur in distributivo *uterque*.

Diomedes Prolepsin dicit esse, quoties id quod posterius gestum est, ante describimus: ut Virgil.

<sup>a</sup> *Laviniaque venit Littora*. Lavinium enim nondum erat, quum Aeneas veniret in Italiam. Dicitur verò Prolepsis à *pro* quod est ante, & *lepsis* sumo.

## Z E U G M A.

Zeugma  
quid sit.

**Z** Zeugma est unius verbi vel adjectivi, viciniori respondentis, ad diversa supposita reductio; ad unum quidem expressè, ad alterum verò per supplementum: ut Cic. *Nihil te nocturnum* <sup>a</sup> *praesidium palatii*, *nihil urbis* <sup>a</sup> *vigiliae*, *nihil* <sup>a</sup> *timor populi*, *nihil* <sup>a</sup> *concurfus honorum omnium*, *nihil hic munitissimus habendi Senatus* <sup>a</sup> *locus*, *nihil horum* <sup>a</sup> *ora vultusque* <sup>b</sup> *moverunt*? Hic *moverunt*, expressè reductur ad *ora vultusque*, at ad cetera per supplementum: Subintelligendum est enim, *praesidium movit*, *vigiliae moverunt*, *timor populi movit*, *honorum concurfus movit*, *habendi Senatus locus movit*. Attamen quando est comparatio vel similitudo, verbum vel adjectivum convenit cum remotiore: ut, <sup>a</sup> *Ego melius quam tu* <sup>b</sup> *scribo*. <sup>a</sup> *Ego sicut saenum* <sup>b</sup> *arui*. *Hoc* <sup>a</sup> *ille ita prudenter atque ego* <sup>b</sup> *fecisset*.

Item per *nisi*: ut Ter. *Talem filium* <sup>a</sup> *nulla nisi tu* <sup>b</sup> *pareverit*.

Licet Poetae interdum aliter loqui soleant: ut, Ovid. *Quid nisi secreta* <sup>b</sup> *laeserunt Phyllida* <sup>a</sup> *sylvae*?

De quibus in concordantia verbi & nominativi supra est dictum: ut Cic. *Quare, ut arbitror, prius hic te nos*, *quam istic* <sup>a</sup> *tu nos* <sup>b</sup> *videbis*.

Zeugma  
triplex.

Tribus modis fit Zeugma.

In persona: ut, *Ego* <sup>a</sup> *Tu* <sup>b</sup> *studes*.

In genere: ut, *Maritus* <sup>a</sup> *uxor est* <sup>b</sup> *Irata*.

In numero: ut, — *hic illius arma*, *Hic* <sup>a</sup> *currus* <sup>b</sup> *fuit*.

Ponitur aliquando verbum vel adjectivum in principio, & tum vocatur Protozeugma: ut, <sup>b</sup> *Dormio* <sup>a</sup> *Ego* <sup>a</sup> *tu*. Quandoque in medio, vocaturque Mesozeugma: ut, <sup>a</sup> *Ego*



# SYNTAXIS.

113

<sup>a</sup> Ego <sup>b</sup> dormio & <sup>c</sup> tu. Quandoque in fine, & vocatur Hypozeugma: ut, Ego & <sup>a</sup> tu <sup>b</sup> dormis.

Requiruntur autem in Zeugmate quatuor: Duo substantiva; ut, Rex & Regina: Conjunctio, quæ vel copulativa vel disjunctiva, vel etiam expletiva esse potest; ut, Et, vel, &c. Verbum vel adjectivum; ut, Irata est: & quod verbum vel adjectivum viciniore supposito respondeat. Fit etiam quoddam Zeugmatis genus per adverbia: ut, <sup>b</sup> Cubas <sup>a</sup> ubi ego. <sup>b</sup> Cenas <sup>a</sup> quando nos.

Quando Verbum ad duo supposita reducitur, & cum utroque convenit, est Zeugma, ut dicunt, Locutionis non Constructionis: ut, <sup>a</sup> Joannes <sup>b</sup> fuit piscator & <sup>a</sup> Petrus.

Dicitur autem Zeugma quasi copulatum, à Græco Verbo *zeugnô* vel *zeugnu*, quod est copulo.

## SYNTHESIS.

**S**ynthesis, est oratio congrua sensu, non voce: ut, <sup>a</sup> Virg. <sup>a</sup> Pars in frustra <sup>b</sup> secant. <sup>a</sup> Gens <sup>b</sup> armati. Synthesis quid sit.

Fit autem Synthesis, nunc in genere tantum, idque aut sensus discernendi causâ: ut, <sup>a</sup> Anser <sup>b</sup> sexta, <sup>a</sup> Elephantus <sup>b</sup> gravis: aut supplementi gratiâ: ut, <sup>a</sup> Praeneste sub <sup>b</sup> ipsa: subauditur urbe.

<sup>a</sup> Centauro in <sup>b</sup> magnâ: subintelligitur navi.

Nunc in numero tantum: ut, <sup>a</sup> Turba <sup>b</sup> ruum. <sup>b</sup> Aperite <sup>a</sup> aliquis ostium.

Nunc vero in genere & numero simul: ut, <sup>a</sup> Pars <sup>b</sup> meris tenuere ratem.

<sup>a</sup> Virg. Hac <sup>a</sup> manus ob patriam pugnando vulnera <sup>b</sup> passi.

Dicitur autem Synthesis, à *σύν* quod est con, & *θεσις* positio; quia est compositio, id est, constructio facta gratiâ significationis.

## ANTIPTOSIS.

**A**ntiptosis, ab *αντι* quod est pro, & *πτοσις* casus, est Antiptosis positio casus pro casu, idque interdum non inveniunt: ut <sup>a</sup> Virg. <sup>a</sup> Urbem quam statuo, <sup>b</sup> vestra est. Ter. <sup>a</sup> Pe- Antiptosis quid sit.

pulo

pulo ut <sup>b</sup> placerent quas fecisset <sup>a</sup> fabulas. <sup>a</sup> Sermone[m] quem audisti, non <sup>b</sup> est mens. <sup>a</sup> Ejus non <sup>b</sup> venit in mentem, pro id. Quamquam hic venit, impersonaliter potius usurpari existimandum est. Aristotelis libri sunt omne <sup>b</sup> genus <sup>a</sup> elegantia referti: pro omnis generis. Sic id <sup>b</sup> genus, quod genus, &c. <sup>b</sup> Idne esis? <sup>a</sup> auctores mihi? pro ejus. Interdum autem fit durior Antiptosis: ut, Salve <sup>b</sup> primus omnium parens patrie <sup>a</sup> appellate, pro prima. Habet duos gladios, <sup>b</sup> quibus <sup>a</sup> altero re occisurum minatur, altero villicum: pro quorum altero.

## SYNECDOCHE.

**S**ynecdoche est, cum id quod partis est attribuitur toti: ut, *Æthiops* <sup>a</sup> albus <sup>b</sup> dentes. Hic albus, quod solis dentibus convenit, toti attribuitur Æthiopi.

Nota.

Per Synecdochen omnia nomina adjectiva, aliquam proprietatem significantia; item verba passiva, & neutralia, significantia aliquam passionem, possunt regere accusativum, aut ablativum, significantem locum in quo est proprietas aut passio: ut, <sup>a</sup> *Eger* <sup>b</sup> pedes, vel <sup>b</sup> pedibus. <sup>a</sup> *Saucius* <sup>b</sup> frons, vel <sup>b</sup> fronte. <sup>a</sup> *Doleo* <sup>b</sup> caput, vel <sup>b</sup> capite. <sup>a</sup> *Redimitus* <sup>b</sup> tempora lauro. <sup>a</sup> *Truncatus* <sup>b</sup> membra bipenni. *Effusus* <sup>a</sup> lantia <sup>b</sup> comas, <sup>a</sup> *contususque* <sup>b</sup> pectus.

Nam illæ Græcæ phrasæ sunt: <sup>b</sup> *Excepto* <sup>a</sup> quod non simul esses, <sup>b</sup> *cætera* <sup>a</sup> latius, <sup>b</sup> *cætera* <sup>a</sup> similes, uno differunt. Dicitur autem Synecdoche à σύν quod est con, & ἔκ τινος suscipio: videlicet, quod totum cum sua parte caplatur.

¶ Si cui lubet figurata constructionis elegantias pernoscere, legat Thomam Linacrum de Eclipsi, Pleonasmō & Enallage, deque aliis figuris eruditè, dilucidè, ac copiose differentem.

DE PROSODIA.

**P**rosodia est, quæ rectam vocum pronunciationem tradit; Latine *accentus* dicitur. Prosodia quid sit.

Dividitur autem Prosodia, in Tonum, Spiritum, & Tempus.

Tonus est lex vel nota, quâ syllaba in dictione elevatur, vel deprimitur. Tonus.

Est autem tonus triplex, { Acutus.  
Gravis.  
Circumflexus.

Tonus acutus, est virgula obliqua ascendens in dextram, sic [ ' ] Tonus acutus.

Gravis, est virgula obliqua descendens in dextram ad hunc modum [ ` ] Gravis.

Circumflexus, est quiddam ex utrisque conflatum, hæc figurâ [ ^ ] Circumflexus.

Huc addatur etiam Apostrophus, qui est quædam circumli pars in summo literæ apposita, quam sic pinges [ ' ] Apostrophus.

Hæc notâ ultimam dictionis vocalem deesse ostenditur: ut, *Tanton' me crimine dignum dixisti?* pro *tantone*.

Spiritus duo sunt, Asper & Lenis. Spiritus.

Asper, quo aspirata profertur syllaba: ut, *Homo, honor.*

Lenis, quo citra aspirationem syllaba profertur: ut, *Amo, onus.*

TONORUM REGULA I.

**M**onosyllaba dictio brevis, aut positione longa acuitur: ut, *Mel, fel, pars, pax.* Naturâ longa circumflectitur: ut, *Spes, flôs, Sôl, thûs, rûs.* Monosyllaba.

REGULA II.

In dissyllaba dictione, si prior longa fuerit naturâ, posterior brevis; prior circumflectitur: ut, *Lûna, Mûsa.* In cæteris acuitur: ut, *Cirrus, latus, solers, satur.* Dissyllaba.

REGULA III.

Dictio polysyllaba, si penultimam habet longam, acuit eandem; ut, *Libertas, penâtes.* Sin brevem habet penultimam, Polysyllaba.

# 116 PROSODIA.

penultimam, acuit antepenultimam: ut, *Dóminus, Póntifex.*

Excipiuntur composita à Facio: ut, *Benefáctis, malefáctis, calefáctis, frigefáctis.*

Nota.

At si penultima longa fuerit natura, & ultima brevis, circumflectitur penultima: ut, *Románuus, amátor.*

Composita à fit, ultimam aciunt: ut, *Malefít, calefít, benefít, satisfít.*

## Appendix.

Nota.

Quia hodie propter hominum imperitiam, circumflexus ab acuto vix prolatione discernitur, Grammatici circumflexum cum acuto confuderunt.

## REGULA IV.

Quæ tónos perturbant.

Quinque sunt quæ tonorum regulas perturbant.

### 1. Differentia.

Differentia.

Differentia tonum transponit: ut, *Uná* adverbium ultimam acuit ne videatur esse nomen. Sic *ed, alió, aliquó, continúo, seduló, porró, forté, quá, siquá, aliquá, nequá, illó, falsó, citó, feré, plané,* & id genus, alia: *putá* pro *fícti*, *poné* pro *post*, *corám, circum, aliás, palám, ergó* conjunctio, sed *ergó* pro causa circumflectitur: ut,

*Virg.—illius ergó Venimus.* Hæc igitur omnia sicut *Græca* acutitona, in fine quidem sententiarum aciuntur, in consequentia vero gravantur.

Sic differentia: causâ antepenultima suspenditur in *his, Déinde, próinde, périnde, aliquando, síquando, nequándó, húcúsque, álonge, délonge, déinceps, dúntaxat, déorsum, quápropter, quínimo, enímvéro, propémódum, ádmódum, áffabre, intereáloci, nihilóminus, paulóminus, cùm non sunt orationes diversæ, uti sunt Pube tenuis, erurum tenuis: non enim composita sunt, velut háctenus, quatenus, & ejus generis reliqua.*

### 2. Transpositio.

Transpositio.

Transpositio tonum invertit, id quod usu venit in

In præpositionibus, quæ postpositæ gravantur: ut, Virg. *Transstra per & remos. Te penes imperium.*

3. *Attractio.*

Attractio tonum mutat, cum post vocabulum aliquod sequitur conjunctio inclinativa: ut, *Que, ne, ve, Attrahunt enim hæ particule accentum syllabæ præcedenti, eamque acuiunt: ut, Luminæque laurisque Dei. Sic Dum, sis, nam, parelca.*

Ubi autem est manifesta compositio, non variatur tonus: ut, *Dénique, nique, itaque, undique, biccine, & hujusmodi.*

*Ubique* tamen temporis sui tonum servat, & *Ubique & Ubivis.*

4. *Concisio.*

Concisio transfert tonum, cum dictiones per Syncopen aut Apocopen castrantur; tunc enim tonum retinent integræ dictionis: ut, *Virgili, Valéri, Mercúri: pro Virgilii, Valerii, Mercurii.*

Sic quædam nomina & pronomina syncopata circumflectunt ultimam: ut, *Arpinás, Ravennás, nostrás, vestrás, cujás: ab Arpinatis, Ravennatis, nostratis, &c. Sic Donéc, à donecum. Sic húc, illúc, istúc, adhúc, &c. pro hucce, illucce, &c. Et composita à dic, duc, fac: ut, benedic, redúc, calefac.*

5. *Idioma.*

Idioma, hoc est linguæ proprietas, tonum variat, aded ut, si dictiones Græcæ integræ ad nos veniant, servant tonum suum: ut, *Symóis, Períphas* penultimam acuiunt: at facta Latina, antepenultimam elevant, quia corripiunt penultimam.

Quæ autem prorsus Latina sunt, Latinum quoque tonum servant: ut, *Geórgica, Bucólica,* antepenultimam acutâ, licet apud Græcos in ultimâ tonum habeant.

Sic & *comædia, tragædia, sóphia, symphónia,* tonum recipiunt in antepenultimâ, licet in suâ linguâ habeant in penultimâ.

Porro

Nota.

Porro, si ignoretur proprius peregrinæ vocis tonus, tutissimum fuerit juxta Latinum accentum illam enunciare.

Syllabæ communes.

Syllabæ communes in prosa oratione semper corripuntur: ut, Cēlebris, Cāthēdra, Mediocris.

## DE CARMINUM

Ratione.

De syllab. tempore.

**H** Actenus de Tonis & Spiritibus; deinceps de syllabarum tempore, & carminis ratione pauca adjiciemus.

Tempus quid. Syllab. brev. Longa.

Tempus est syllabæ pronunciandæ mensura. Syllaba brevis unius est temporis, longa verò duorum.

Pes.

Tempus breve sic notatur [ ∪ ]

Longum autem sic [ - ] ut Terrā.

Ex syllabis justo ordine dispositis fiunt pedes.

Est autem Pes duarum syllabarum pluriūve constitutio, ex certa temporum observatione.

Diviso pedum.

Pedum alii dissyllabi, alii trissyllabi.

De tetrasyllabis autem non multum attinet ad hoc nostrum institutum differere.

Dissyllabi sunt.

Spondæus,  
Pyrrhichius,  
Trochæus,  
Iambus,

ut { -- Virtus.  
-- Deus.  
-- Panis.  
-- Amans.

Trissyllabi sunt.

Molossus,  
Tribrachus,  
Dactylus,  
Anapæstus,  
Bacchius,  
Antibacchius,  
Amphimacer,  
Amphibrachus,

ut { --- Magnates.  
--- Dominus,  
--- Scribere.  
--- Pietas.  
--- Honestas.  
--- Audire.  
--- Charitas.  
--- Venire.

Porro, pedes justo numero atque ordine concinnati, carmen constituunt.

Est



Est enim Carmen, oratio iusto atque legitimo pedum Carman numero constricta.

Carmen composituro Imprimis discendum est, pedibus ipsum rite metiri, quam Scansionem vocant.

Est autem Scansio, legitima carminis in singulos pedes Scansio; commensuratio.

### Scansioni accidentia.

Scansioni accidunt, Synaloepha, Eclipsis, Synæresis, Diæresis, & Cæsura.

Synaloepha est elisio quædam vocalis ante alteram In Synaloepha.

*Sera nimis vir' est crastina, viv' hodie.*

Fit autem interdum in his dictionibus; ut, Dii, diis, iidem, iisdem, deinde, deinceps, semianimis, semihomo, semiustus, deest, deero, deerit, & similibus.

At, heu & O, nunquam Intercipiuntur.

Eclipsis est, quoties *m* cum sua vocali perimitur, Eclipsis proxima dictione à vocali exorsa: ut,

*Monstr', horrend', inform', ingens, cui lumen ademptum;*  
pro *Monstrum, horrendum, &c.*

Synæresis est duarum syllabarum in unam contractio: Synæresis ut Virg. *Seu lentæ fuerint alvæ vimine textæ:* pro *alvearia.*

Diæresis est, ubi ex una syllaba dissecta, fiunt duæ: Diæresis,

ut, Ovid. *Debuerant fusos evoluisse suos, pro evoluisse.*

Cæsura est, cum post pedem absolutum, syllaba brevis Cæsura. in fine dictionis extenditur.

### Cæsurae species sunt,

Triemimeris ex pede & syllabâ: ut,

Triemimeris.

Virgil. *Pectoribus inhians spirantia consulit exta.*

Penthemimeris, ex duobus pedibus & syllabâ: ut,

Penthemimeris.

Virgil. *Omnia vincit amor, & nos cedamus amori.*

Hepthemimeris.

Hepthemimeris, ex tribus pedibus &amp; syllaba : ut,

- - - - -

Idem. *Ostentans artem pariter arcumque sonantem.*

Enneemimeris.

Enneemimeris, constat ex quatuor pedibus &amp; syllaba ut,

- - - - -

Idem. *Ille latus niveum molli fultus hyacintho.*

## DE GENERIBUS

Carminum.



Arminum genera usitatioꝛa, de quibus nos hoc loco potissimum tractare decrevimus, sunt Heroicum, Elegiacum, Asclepiadæum, Sapphicum, Phaleucium, Iambicum.

## Carmen Heroicum.

Hexametrum.

Carmen Heroicum, quod idem Hexametrum dicitur, constat pedibus numero quidem sex, genere verò duobus, dactylo & spondeo. Quintus locus dactylum, sextus spondeum peculiariter sibi vendicat : reliqui hunc vel illum, prout volumus.

- - - - -

ut Virgil. *Tityre tu patulæ recubans sub tegmine fagi.*

Reperitur aliquando spondeus etiam in quinto loco ut,

Idem. *Chara Deum soboles, magnum Fovis incrementum.*

Ultima communis.

Ultima cujusque versûs syllaba habetur communis.

## Carmen Elegiacum.

Pentametrum.

Carmen Elegiacum, quod & Pentametri nomen habet, è duplici constat Penthemimeri, quarum prior duos pedes, dactylicos, spondaicos, vel alterutros comprehendit, cum syllaba longa : altera etiam duos pedes, sed omnino dactylicos, cum syllaba item longa.

- - - - -

ut Ovidius. *Res est solliciti plena timoris amor.*

## Carmen Asclepiadæum.

Asclepiadæum.

Carmen Asclepiadæum, constat ex penthemimeri, hoc

# PROSODIA.

121

hoc est, spondæo & dactylo, & syllabâ longâ, & duobus  
deinde dactylis : ut,

Horatius. *Mecenas atavis editæ regibus,*

## Sapphicum.

Carmen Sapphicum constat ex trochæo, spondæo, Sapphi-  
dactylo, & duobus demum trochæis : ut, cum.

Horatius. *Fam satis terris niviis atque dira.*

In hoc tamen carminis genere, post tres versus Adonic.  
additur Adonicum, quod constat ex dactylo & spon- ubi &  
dæo : ut, unde.

Horatius. *Integer vitæ scelerisque purus.*

*Non eget Mauri jaculis, nec arcu,*

*Nec venenatis gravidâ sagittis,  
Fusce, pharetrâ.*

## Phaleucium, sive Hendecasyllabum.

Carmen Phaleucium, sive Hendecasyllabum, constat ex Phaleu-  
spondæo, dactylo, & tribus tandem trochæis : ut, cium.

*Quoquæ diffugias, pavens Mabili,  
Nostrum non poteris latere nasum.*

## Iambicum Archilochium.

Legitimæ versus Iambicus è solis constat Iambis : ut, Carmen

*Suis & ipsa Roma viribus ruit.* Iambi-  
cum.

Recipit tamen interdum in locis imparibus pro Iambo  
tribrachium, spondæum, dactylum, anapestum : atque in  
paribus tribrachium, spondæum rariùs.

Hoc cæmen in duo genera diducitur ; Dimetrum, &  
Trimetrum sive Senarium.

N 2

Dime-

Dimetrum constat ex quatuor pedibus : ut,

*O Carminum dulces nota* ---o---o---

*Quas ore pulchra melleo* ---o---o---

*Fundis, lyraq; succinis!* ---o---o---

### Trimetrum sive Senarium.

Trimetrum senis constat pedibus : ut,

*Qui nos damnant, sunt histriones maximi.*

## DE QUANTITATE primarum syllabarum.

**P**rimarum syllabarum quantitas octo modis cognoscitur ;

Positione, vocali ante vocalem, diphthongo, derivatione, compositione, præpositione, regulâ, exemplo, seu autoritate.

#### POSITIO. Regula I.

Vocalis ante duas consonantes, aut duplicem in eadem dictione, ubique positurâ longa est ; ut,

*Ventus, axis, patrio.*

Quod si consonans priorem dictionem claudat, sequente item à consonante inchoante, vocalis præcedens etiam positione longa erit ; ut,

*Major sum, quam cui possit fortuna nocere.*

Syllabæ *jor, sum, quam & sit*, positione longæ sunt.

At si prior dictio in vocalem brevem exeat, sequente à duabus consonantibus incipiente, interdum, sed rarius producitur ;

---o---o---o---o---  
ut Virg. *Occulta spolia, & plures de pace triumphos,*  
Vocalis brevis ante mutam, sequente liquidâ, com-  
munis

# PROSODIA.

123

munis redditur ; ut, *Patris, volucris*. Longa verò non mutatur : ut, *Aratrum, simulacrum*.

## Vocalis ante alteram.

### Regula II.

Vocalis ante alteram in eadem dictione ubique brevis est ; ut, *Dēus, mēus, tūus, pīus*.

Excipias genitivos in *ius*, secundam pronominis formam habentes ; ut, *Unius, illius, &c.* Ubi *i*, communis reperitur, licet in alterius semper sit brevis, in alius semper longa.

Excipiendi sunt etiam genitivi & dativi quintæ declinationis, ubi *e* inter geminum *i*, longa sit ; ut, *Faciel* : alioqui non ; ut, *Rēi, spēi, fidēi*.

Et etiam in *fio*, longa est, nisi sequantur *e* & *r* simul ; ut, *Fīerem, Fīeri*.

Juven. *Sic fiunt octo mariti*.-----

Idem. *Quod fieri non posse putes*.-----

*Ohe* Intersectio, priorem syllabam ancipitem habet.

Vocalis ante alteram in Græcis dictionibus subinde longa fit ; ut *Dicite Pīerides*. Respice *Lāerten*. Et in possessivis ; ut, *Ænēia nutrix*. *Rhodopēus Orpheus*.

## DIPHTHONGUS.

### Regula III.

Omnis Diphthongus apud Latīnos longa est ; ut, *Abīram, nēuter, musæ* ; nisi sequente vocali ; ut, *Præire, Præustus, Præamplus*.

## DERIVATIO.

### Regula IV.

Derivativa eandem cum primitivis quantitatem sortiuntur ; ut, *āmator, āmicus, āmabilis*, primā brevi ab *āmō*. Excipiuntur tamen pauca, quæ à brevibus deducta primam produciunt.

N 3

Cujus

*Sedile  
sepius  
habet  
breve in ante-  
penulti-  
ma.*

ius generis sunt.

Vox vōcis, à vōco.  
Lex lēgis, à lēgo.  
Rex rēgis, à rēgo.  
Sedes & sēdile, à sēdeo.  
Jumentum, à jūvo.  
Fomes & fomentum, à fōveo.

Jucundus, à jūvō.  
Jūnior, à jūvenis.  
Mōbilis, à mōveo.  
Hūmanus, ab hōmo.  
Vōmer, à vōmo.  
Pēdor, à pēde.

Sunt & contrā, quæ à longis deducta, corripuntur :

qualia sunt,  
Dux dūcis, à dūco.  
Dīcax, maledīcus & id  
genus multa à dīco.  
Fīdes, à fīo.  
ārena, } ab āreo.  
ārista, }  
Pōsui, à pōno.

Gēnui, à gigno.  
Frāgor, } à frango.  
Frāgilis, }  
Nōto, as, à Nōtu.  
Nāto, as, à nātu.  
Dīsertus, à dīffero.  
Sōpor, à Sōpio.

Et alia nonnulla ex utroque genere, quæ relinquuntur  
studiosis inter legendum observanda.

#### COMPOSITIO. Regula V.

Composita simplicium quantitatem sequuntur ; ut,  
Pōtens, impōtens ; Sōlor, consōlor ; Lēgo, is, Perlēgo,  
Lēgo, as, allēgo.

Excipiuntur tamen hæc brevīa à longis enata : ut,

Innūba, } à nūbo, } Dejēro, } à jūro.  
Pronūba, } Pejēro, }

#### PRÆPOSITIO. Regula VI.

Ex præpositionibus hæc ubique producuntur ; A, de,  
præ, se, e, nisi vocall sequente ; ut, unda debiscens.

*Sudibūsve præustis, apud Virgilium.*

Pro quoque longa est. præterquam in istis ;

Prōcella, prōfugus, prōtervus, prōnepos, prōpagō  
prō stirpe, prōfanus, prōfiteor, prōfundus, prōficiscor,  
prōfari, prōpero, prōfugio, prōfectō.

Procurro, profundo, propello, propulso, propago, as,  
primam syllabam habent ancipitem.

Prōpheta & prōpino, Græca sunt per o parvum, &  
primam brevem habent.



*Di*, etiam producit, nisi in *Dīrimo*, & *Dīlarus*.

Reliquæ præpositiones, si positio finat, corripuntur!

Cujusmodi sunt, *Ad*, *ob*, *ab*, *sub*, *re*, *in*, &c.

## REGULA VII. Canon I.

Omne præteritum dissyllabum, priorem habet longam: ut, *Lēgi*, *ēmi*. Excipias tamen *Fīdi* à *fīdo*, *bībi*, *dēdi*, *scīdi*, *stēti*, *tūli*.

## Canon II.

Primam præteriti geminantia, primam iidem brevem habent: ut,

<i>Pēpendi</i> ,	{ { }	<i>Pēpedi</i> ,	{ { }	<i>Pūpugi</i> ,
<i>Tētendi</i> ,		<i>Tūtudi</i> ,		<i>Dīdici</i> ,
<i>Tōtondi</i> ,		<i>Fēfelli</i> ,		<i>Cēcīdi</i> , à <i>cado</i> .
<i>Mōmordi</i> ,		<i>Tētigi</i> ,		<i>Cēcīdi</i> , à <i>crdo</i> .

Quin & supinum dissyllabum, priorem quoque producit ut, *Mōtum*, *Lātum*, *Lōtum*, *Crētum*. Excipe *Quītum*, *Sītum*, *Lītum*, *ītum*, *Rūtum*, *Rātum*, *Dātum*, *Sātum*.

Et *cītum*, à *cio*, *es*: nam *cītum*, à *cio*, *cis*, *quartæ*, priorem habet longam.

## EXEMPLUM SEU AUTHORITAS.

### Regula VIII.

Quarum verò syllabarum quantitas, sub prædictas rationes non cadit; à poëtarum usu, exemplo atque auctoritate petenda est certissima omnium regula. Discant ergò pueri observare ex poëtis communes primarum syllabarum quantitates, cujus fortis sunt:

*Britannus*, *Bithynus*, *Cacus*, *Corcyra*, *Crathys*, *Pachynus*, *Palatium*, *Pellon*, *Creticus*, *Curetes*, *Diana*, *Fidenæ*, *Gradivus*, *Hinulus*, *Pyrenie*, *Rubigo*, *Rutilius*, *Hymen*, *italus*, *liquor*, *liquidus*, *Lycas*, *Orion*, *rudo*, *Sychæus*, *sycanius*, & similia.

## DE MEDIIS SYLLABIS.

**M** Edix syllabæ partim eadem ratione quâ primæ, partim etiam ex incrementis genitivi atque conjugationis analogiâ cognosci possunt.

De incrementis genitivi nominum polysyllabarum,

suprà in generibus nominum abunde dictum arbitramur; tunde petere licebit, si quid de hac re hæsitaveris. Cætera frequens lectio & optimorum Poëtarum observatio facile suppeditabunt.

Conju-  
gatio-  
num  
analo-  
gia

Conjugationis analogiam ex imbibitis rudimentis pueri didicerunt, nempe A. Indicem primæ conjugationis, longam esse naturâ, præterquam in do, & ejus compositis, quando hujus sunt conjugationis : ut, Dāmus, circumdāmus ; Dābis, circumdābis ; Dāre, circumdāre.

Præterea syllabas rimus & ritis, in præterito perfecti modi subjunctivi, ubique pro brevibus habendas animadvertant, in futuro autem in oratione prosa longas esse debere ; in carmine verò indifferentes reperiri ; quemadmodum contendit Aldus : ut præterito, Amaverimus, amaveritis : Futuro Amaverimus, amaveritis.

Est & ubi mediæ syllabæ variant apud Poëtas, ut in his quæ subjunximus : Connubium, Ficedula, Malea, Pharsalia, Batavus, Sidonius, & in his similibus.

Adjectiva in *inus* Latina, penultimam producant : ut, Clandestinus, mediastinus, parietinus, matutinus, vespertinus, repentinus.

Præter hæc sequentia

{	Diutinus,	}	Serotinus,
	Crastinus,		Oleaginus,
	Pristinus,		Faginus,
	Perendinus,		Cedrinus,
	Horrotinus,		Carbasinus.

Et reliqua materialia, sive à metallorum nominibus formata in *inus*, qualia sunt permulta à Græcis vocibus deducta in *ius* : ut, Crystallinus, myrrhinus, hyacinthinus, adamantinus, &c.

Cætera scilicet docebit usus, & Poëtarum observatio, quam ullæ Grammaticorum regulæ, quas sine ullo aut modo aut fine de mediarum syllabarum quantitate tradere solent.

Quare illis prætermisissis, ad ultimarum syllabarum quantitates aperiendas jam accingamur.

DE ULTIMIS SYLLABIS.

**Q**uanquam ultimæ syllabæ ipsum literarum numerum aut æquant, aut etiam superant, non tamen pigebit illas etiam ordine percurrere.

Primum, *a* finita producuntur: ut, Amā, contrā, ergā. Excipias Putā, itā, quā.

A.

Item nominativos, & omnes casus in *a*, cuiusculunque fuerint generis, numeri, aut declinationis, præter vocativos in *a*, à Græcis in *as*: ut, ô Æneā, ô Thomā: & ablativum primæ declinationis; ut, ab hac Musā. Numeralia in ginta *a* finalem habent communem, sed frequentius longam: ut Trīgintā, quadragintā.

In *b*, *d*, *t*, desinentia, brevia sunt: ut, āb, ād, capūt.

B. D. T.

In *c* desinentia, producuntur, ut, āc, sīc, & hīc adverbium. Sed tria in *c*, semper contrahuntur: ut, Lāc, nēc, donēc. Duo sunt communia: Fāc, & pronomen hic, & neutrum hoc, modò non sit ablativi casus.

C.

E finita brevia sunt: ut, Marē, penē, legē, scribē.

E.

Excipiendæ sunt omnes voces quintæ inflexionis in *e*: ut, Diē, fidē, unā cum adverbis inde enatis: ut, Hodiē, quotidiē, pridē, postridē, qua-rē, qua-de-rē, ea-rē: & siqua sunt similia. Et secundæ item personæ singulares imperativorum activorum secundæ conjugationis: ut, Docē, movē, manē, cavē.

Fames olim quintæ nunc tertiæ declinationis producit ultimam in ablativo, me.

Producuntur etiam monosyllaba in *e*: ut, Mē, tē, sē: præter Quē, nē, vē, conjunctiones encliticas.

Quin & adverbia quoque in *e*, ab adjectivis deducta, e longum habent: ut, Pulchrē, doctē, valdē præ valide. Quibus accedunt Fermē, ferē. Benē tamen & malē corripuntur omnino.

Postremò, quæ à Græcis per *n* scribuntur, naturā producuntur, cuiusculunque fuerint casus, generis, aut numeri: ut, Lethē, Anchisē, Cetē, Tempē.

I finita, longa sunt: ut, Domini, magistrī, amarī, docerī.

I.

Præter

Præter mihi, tibi, sibi, ubi, ibi, quæ sunt communia,  
Nisi verò & quasi corripuntur; cuius etiam sortis sunt  
dativi & vocativi Græcorum, quorum genitivus singula-  
ris in *os* breve exit: ut,

Huic { Palladi,  
Phyllidi, } Vocat. ô { Amarylli,  
Minoidi, } Alexi,  
Daphni.

**L.** *L* finita corripuntur; ut, Animäl, Annibäl, mël,  
pugil, säl, consül. Præter näl contractum à nihil, & Söl.  
Et Hebræa quædam in *l*; ut, Michaël, Gabriël, Raphaël,  
Daniël.

**N.** *N* finita producuntur; ut, Pæän, Hymën, Quïn,  
Xenophôn, nôn, dæmôn.

Excipe forsän, forsitän, än, tamën, attamën, verun-  
tamën.

**In.** Corripitur & *In*, cum compositis; ut, Exïn, subïn,  
deïn, proïn.

Accedunt his & voces illæ, quæ per apocopen castran-  
tur; ut, Mën? Vidën? Andïn? Nemôn?

**En.** Nomina item in *en*, quorum genitivus inis correptum  
habet; ut, Carmën, crimën, pectën, tibicën, inis.

**On.** Græca etiam in *on* per *o* parvum, cuiuscunque fuerint  
casus; ut, Nom. Iliön, Peliön. Accus. Caucasön, Pylön.

Quædam etiam in *in* per *i*, ut, Alexin. In *yn* per *y*,  
ut, Ityn.

In *an* quoque à Nominativis in *A*; ut, Nom. Iphige-  
nia, Ægina. Accusat. Iphigeniän, Æginän.

Nam in *an*, à nominativis in *as*, producuntur; ut, No-  
minat. Æneas, Marſyas. Accusat. Æneän, Marſyän.

**O finita.** *O* finita, communia sunt; ut, Amo, virgo, porrò, do-  
cendo, legendo, eundo, & aliæ gerundii voces in *do*.

Præter obliquos in *o*, qui semper producuntur; ut  
huic Dominò, servò. Ab hoc templò, damnò.

Et adverbia ab adjectivis derivata: ut, Tantò, quan-  
tò, liquidò, falsò, primò, manifestò, &c.

Præter sedulò, mutuò, crebrò, serò, quæ sunt com-  
munia.

Ceterum

Cæterum modò & quomodò, semper corripuntur.

Citò quoque, ut & ambo, duo, ego, atque homo; vix leguntur producta.

Monosyllaba tamen in o producuntur; ut, Dò, stò, ut & ergò pro causa.

Item Græca per o cuiuscunque fuerint cassi; ut, hæc Sapphò, Didò. Hujus Androgeò, Apollò. Hunc Athò, Apollò.

R finita corripuntur; ut, Cæsär, tórculär, pēr, vīr, uxōr, turtūr. R.

Cor semel apud Ovidium productum legitur; ut,

*Molle meum levibus cor est violabile telis.*

Producuntur etiam Fär, lār, nār, vēr, fūr, cūr; Pār, quoque cum compositis; ut, Compār, impār, dispār.

Græca etiam in er, quæ illis in ηρ desinunt; ut, Aēr, cratēr, charactēr, æthēr, sotēr.

Præter patēr & matēr, quæ apud Latinos ultimam brevem habent.

S finita, pares cum numero vocalium habent terminationes; nempe, As, es, is, os, us. S.

Primò as finita producuntur; ut, Amās, musās, majestās, bonitās. As.

Præter Græca, quorum genitivus singularis in dos exit; ut, Arcās, Pallās. Genitivo Arcadòs, Palladòs.

Et præter accusativos plurales nominum crescentium; ut, Heros, Heroos; Phyllis, Phyllidos. Accusativo plurali, Heroās, Phyllidās.

Es finita, longa sunt; ut, Anchisēs, sedēs, docēs, patrēs. Es.

Excipiuntur nomina in es, tertiæ inflexionis, quæ penultimam genitivi crescentis corripunt; ut, Milēs, segēs, divēs. Sed Ariēs, abiēs, pariēs, Cerēs, & pēs, unā cum compositis; ut, Bipēs, tripēs, quadrupēs, longa sunt.

Es quoque à sum, unā cum compositis corripitur; ut, Potēs, adēs, prodēs, obēs.

Quibus penēs adjungi potest unā cum neutris ac nomina-

nominativis pluralibus Græcorum; ut, Hippomanēs, Cargethēs, Cyclopēs, Naiadēs.

Is.

*Is* finita, brevīa sunt; ut, Parīs, panīs, tristīs, hilarīs.

Excipe obliquos plurales in *is* qui producuntur; ut, Musīs, mensīs, à mensa, dominīs, templīs.

Item quīs pro quibus, cum producentibus penultimam genitivi crescentis; ut, Samnīs, Salamīs; Genitivo, Samnītis, Salamīnis.

Adde huc quæ in *eis* diphthongum desinunt, sive Græca, sive Latina, cujuscunque fuerint numeri aut casūs; ut, Symoeīs, pyroeīs, parteīs, omneīs.

Et monosyllaba item omnia; ut, Vis, lis: præter *is* & quīs nominativos, & Bīs apud Ovidium.

Istis accedunt secundæ personæ singulares verborum in *is* quorum secundæ personæ plurales desinunt in *itis*, penultimā productā, unā cum futuris subjunctivi in *ris*, ut Audīs, velīs, dederīs. *Plural.* Audītis, velītis, dederītis.

Os.

*Os* finita producuntur; ut, Honōs, nepōs, dominōs, servōs.

Præter compōs, impōs, & ōs offis. Et Græca per *o* parvum; ut, Delōs, Chaōs, Palladōs, Phyllidōs.

Us.

*Us* finita corripuntur; ut, Famulūs, regiūs, tempūs, amamūs.

Excipiuntur producentia penultimam genitivi crescentis; ut, Salūs, tellūs, Genitivo Salūtis, tellūris.

Longæ sunt etiam omnes voces quartæ inflexionis in *us*, præter nominativum & vocativum singulares; ut, Hujus manūs, hæ manūs, has manūs, ô manūs.

His accedunt etiam monosyllaba; ut, Crūs, thūs, mūs, sūs, &c.

Et Græca item per *u* diphthongum, cujuscunque fuerint casūs; ut, Hic Panthūs, Melampūs. Hujus Sapphūs, Clītis.

Atque piis cunctis venerandum nomen *I E S U S*.

U.

Postremo, *u* finita producuntur omnia; ut, Manū, genū, amantū, diū.



# OMNIUM NOMINUM IN regulis Generum contentorum, tum Heterocli- torum, ac Verborum Interpretatio aliqua.

**A** Bdo, } to hide  
Abfcondo, }  
Oeculto, }  
Abyffus, immenfa  
quedam profunditas impe-  
netrabilis: *A depth that by  
founding cannot be found.*  
Acarnan, gens ex quadam  
regione Græciæ: *the people  
of Acarnania in Greece.*  
Accerfo, eo ad vocandum,  
vel voco: *to go to call.*  
Acer, arbor: *a Maple tree.*  
Acies, acumen rerum fecan-  
tium, exercitus instructio,  
oculi lumen: *an edge: the  
array of an Army: the  
fight of the eye.*  
Acut, instrumentum far-  
toris, ac mulieris ornamen-  
tum: *a needle, or an instru-  
ment wherewith women did  
let their hair.*  
Adeps, omnis pinguedo, five  
carnis, five alterius rei: *Fat.*  
Adipifcor, aflequutus fum.  
*To obtain.*  
Adolefcens, juvenis, adul-  
tus: *a ftripling from twelve  
to one and twenty.*  
Ador, frumenti genus vel  
farris. *Wheat.*  
Advena, qui non eft civis,  
fed externus: *a ftranger.*  
Æquor, mare, pelagus: *the  
fea, becaufe nothing is more  
plain than it: For æquor  
doth generally fignifie a plain  
in any parcel of the world:  
It is taken for the ayre alfo:  
as Aspice his feras volitan-  
tes æquore cygnos.*  
Æs, fpecies metalli rubro  
colore: *Brass, and becaufe  
that in old time money was  
made of it, Æs fometimes  
doth fignifie money.*  
Æther, tota cœli fyderumq;  
fubftantia ac compago: *the  
whole fubftance of the fphere  
from the five to the extremeft  
circles of heaven.*  
Affinis, cognatus: *a kinf-  
man by marriage.*  
Agnofco, eft nofcere id,  
quod nobis olim aut vifum

fuit, aut alia quapiam ratio-  
ne cognitum: *to recognize,  
to know anew, or to come to  
remembrance of.*  
Ago, facio: *to do.*  
Agragus, urbs Siciliæ:  
*a town in the Ifle of Sicilie,  
called now Gergenti.*  
Agricola, qui exercitat rem  
rulticam: *an husbandman.*  
Alcyon, avis marina, hyeme  
pultos educans: *a certain  
fea-bird that lieth in the  
fands, & hatcheth in winter.*  
Alet, quælibet avis, aut  
velox: *a bird, or swift.*  
Alnus, genus arboris: *an  
Alder-tree.*  
Alo, nutritio: *to nourish.*  
Alter, the other of the two.  
Alvum, qua fordes deflu-  
unt, aut labuntur: *the  
paunch, and fometime the  
belly without.*  
Amazones, Scythicæ feminae  
eo quod mammis careant:  
*certain women of Scythia,  
fo named for lacking a dug.*  
Ambigo, circumago, circun-  
do: *to compafs, to doubt.*  
Amicio, velio: *to cloath.*  
Amnis, fluvius: *a river.*  
Anas, avis in aquis degens:  
*a duck or a drake.*  
Ango, crucio, premo, vexo:  
*to trouble or vex.*  
Anguis, ferpens in aqua de-  
gens: *a dry or a water-snake.*  
Animus, confilii principium:  
*the mind.*  
Anna, nomen mulieris: *Anne.*  
Annuo, affentior: *to affent  
and agree unto.*  
Annus, tempus 365 dierum  
& 6 horarum: *a year.*  
Antes, ab ante, eminentes  
lapides, five ultimæ colum-  
næ, quibus fultinetur fabri-  
ca: *the pillars, or faying  
stones that fail over the wall  
to bear the frame, or the dry  
stone-wall that incloseth a  
Vineyard, or the first fet or  
frontier of Vines.*  
Antidotum, medicamentum  
contra venena datum: *a pro-*

*servative againft poifon.*  
Ania, mulieris capilli in  
fronte demiffi: *a womans  
forelocks.*  
Antiftes, in aliqua re fum-  
mus: *a prefident or chief  
ruler, man or woman.*  
Anus, vetula. *an old wife.*  
Anxus, nomen urbis Italiæ,  
quæ nunc Tarentina dici-  
tur: *Tarentine.*  
Aperio, indico, refero: *to  
open, to fhew, or to declare.*  
Apes & apes, animal melli-  
ficum: *a Bee.*  
Apifcor, aflequor, acquiror:  
*to obtain.*  
Apollo, deus quem Græci  
folem appellant: *the God of  
wifdom and phyfick, and of  
prophefie, and the God that  
carryeth the Sun about.*  
Appendix, quod aliis adjun-  
ctum, quafi ex alio pendeat:  
*A penthouse, or an addition  
to increafe a thing.*  
Applico, jungo, advenio:  
*to apply unto, or to arrive.*  
Aptoton, nomen invariabi-  
le, fed nullo defectum cafu:  
*a noun undeclined, having  
one termination in all cafes.*  
Aqualis, vafis genus, quo  
aqua tenetur ad præben-  
dam eam manibus: *a laver,  
or an ewer.*  
Arbor, vel arbos, nota  
fignificationis: *a tree.*  
Arcas, ex Arcadia populus  
the people of Arcadia.  
Arceo, pello, & advenire  
non fino: *to keep away.*  
Arceffo, voco & accufo: *to  
call, or to accufe, or to go to  
accufe.*  
Arctus, urfa, quam noſtri  
ſeptentrionem dixerunt, ſig-  
num cœleſte: *a ſign called  
the Bear, or the Wagon.*  
Ardeo, uror, inflammor:  
*to be hot.*  
Argos, oppidi nomen: *a  
town of the Peninſula of  
Greece called Peloponneſus.*  
Arma, munimenta, ſcutum,  
gladius, telum, & ea quibus  
preſumur,

# Nominum & Verborum interpretatio.

**Prælium.** *Armoz, or any kind of weapon.*

**Aruspex,** qui victimas inspicit. *He or she that seeketh destinies by the bowels of beasts.*

**As est libra,** id est, duodecim unciae. *A pound of twelve ounces, or the whole summe of any thing.*

**Assecla,** qui continue et semper aliquem sequitur. *A page or lackey, or continual waiter.*

**Astu, dolo, fallaciis.** *By deceit or guile.*

**Athamas,** nomen viri. *A man's name which should be sacrificed for his son Phryxus.*

**Athenæ,** civitas Græciæ, inter Achaiam et Macedoniam. *The City of Athens.*

**Athletes,** pugil & luctator. *A champion, or he that striketh for a game.*

**Atomus,** corpus infecabile. *A mote so small that it cannot be parted.*

**Auceps,** qui vel quæ aves caput. *A fowler, man or woman.*

**Audeo,** sum ausus. *To be bold.*

**Aveo,** cupio. *To desire, covet.*

**Avernus,** lacus Campaniæ prope Baias, quem Plutoni dicatum opinabantur veteres. *A lake in Italy, whence they thought was the descent into hell.*

**Augeo,** majus facio, amplifico. *To increase.*

**Augur,** qui futura prænunciat. *A soothsayer, man or woman.*

**Auriga,** qui vel quæ currum ducit. *A wagoner, carman, or a carrier.*

**Auster,** ventus flans a meridie. *The south wind.*

**Author,** qui vel quæ aliquid opus facit. *The worker or doer of any thing, man or woman.*

**Axis,** diametros mundi, et dicitur lignum teres, circa quod rota currus vertitur. *An axle-tree: and by transposition, the straight line that may be imagined from the one pole to the other.*

**B**

**Bacchanalia,** Dionysia, i. Bacchi festa. *The feast of Bacchus.*

**Bacchar,** herba radice odorata: *An herb that the Frenchmen call our Ladies gloves.*

**Bacchus,** deus vini. *The drunken god, the god of Wine.*

**Baculus,** bacillus, et baculum et hinc bacillum, scipio. *A staff.*

**Balneum,** locus publicus, vel privatus, in quo aut sanitatis aut abstergendarum foridum causa lavamur: *a bath.*

**Barathrum,** erat locus profundior Athenis putei modo vel forma. *A certain pit by Athens. Now it is taken for hell. It is also the hole where any water entrench, and falleth into the earth.*

**Barbiton,** instrumentum musicum, quod pulsatur plestro vel calamo: *the Lute, or any like that is plaid on with a quill. It is also Barbites, both masculine and feminine.*

**Bellaria,** cibi secundæ mentis. *Juncates.*

**Bes,** uncia octo. *eight ounces.*

**Bibo,** potum haurio, humorem attraho. *To drink.*

**Bidens,** instrumentum duorum dentium, vel ovis. *Any instrument with two teeth: or a sheep of two teeth, in the feminine gender.*

**Bifrons,** habens duas frontes. *He or she that hath a face before and another behind.*

**Bilis,** humoris genus. *It is with this word atra melancholy, and with flava cholera: and being used alone, is the same disease that cholera is after Cor. Celsus: see cholera.*

**Bombyx,** vermis & pro materia sumitur. *A silk worm, or silk.*

**Bos,** nota est significatio. *An ox, cow, or bull.*

**Britannia,** insula quam nunc Angli & Scoti incolunt. *The Isle which is inhabited of Englishmen and Scottishmen, called Britannia major.*

**Britannia minor.** *Is Britain in France.*

**Bubo,** avis nomen, a bovo mugitu. *An owl.*

**Bucephalus,** nomen equi Alexandri magni. *Alexander the great's horse.*

**Byssus,** tenuissimi lini genus. *A most fine sort of fine flax, whereof a precious kind of linnen cloth is made. It may be taken for silk also.*

**C**

**Coethes,** malus mos: *an evil custom, or a bad way to be cured.*

**Cadaver,** corpus mortuum. *A dead carcase.*

**Cado,** corruo, præcipitor, vel labor. *To fall, and sometime to hap, to chance.*

**Cædo,** percutio, ferio, verbero. *To strike, or to beat, and sometime to cut or lop, or to prune trees: sometime to kill, to sacrifice, and sometime to break: ut, cædere januam faxis, instare ferro.*

**Cello,** percutio, aut frango. *To smite, or to break, antiquum verbum, the compounds whereof be in use only. Cello, is also read without a diphthong.*

**Cælum** vel Cœlum, extrema mundi determinatio cum sphaeris quas ambit ad elementum ignis. *Heaven, or with a difference any of the spheres. It signifieth weather also.*

**Calce,** pede comprimo. *To tread upon, and by a transposition unto the mind, to despise and set naught by.*

**Calendæ,** dies primus cuiusque mensis. *The first day of every month.*

**Calco,** ferreo, calidus sum. *To be hot, or to glow.*

**Callis,** via perdurata, id est via trita. *A path way.*

**Calvo,** decipio, frustror. *To deceive, to beguile, to tromp.*

**Calx,** pes imus, & pro cuiusvis rei fine ponitur, vel pro materia qua lapides in muro conglutinantur. *A heel, or last end of a race, or line.*

**Cambio,** commuto. *To exchange, and of the old writers it is taken for to fight.*

Canalis

# Nominum & Verborum interpretatio.

*canalis*, per quod aqua confluat in viis lapide stratis. *A channel.*

*Cancelli*, ligna inter se modicis intervallis in transversum instar retis invicem annexa. *A lattice, or the lists of a game place, or of a spectacle.*

*Canis*, animal latrabile, & piscis marinus, & signum caeleste. *A dog, or a dogfish: a star, or sign in the firmament called Canis.*

*Cano*, To sing, to indite poetically, to play upon instruments: sometime it is to praise or prophesie.

*Capesso*, capio, five ad capiendum eo. *To take, or to go to take: and sometime recipi me, to go, as, Nunc pergam heræ imperium exequi, & me domum capessam.*

*Capio*, To take, to delight, to deceive, to chuse, to abide, and suffer: as capio dolores. *To hold or contain, to invade & catch: as, Navem cepimus. To inflame with love. And is lightly of such signification as the ablative is that cometh with it.*

*Capistrum*, capitis vinculum adhibitum ne animalia aufugiant. *An halter.*

*Capital*, quod olim sacerdotes gestabant in capite. *An Ornament that the Nuns were wont to bear upon their heads.*

*Capra*, animal a carpendis virgultis dictum. *A Goat.*

*Car*, aliquis ex Caria. *A man of Caria.*

*Cardo*, quo Janua movetur. *An hook or hinge.*

*Careo*, est rem desideratam non habere: *To lack or be without, and especially such a thing as once we had.*

*Carex*, herba acuta durissima. *Sedge.*

*Caro*, quod anima careat, non solum de animalibus, sed etiam de piscibus & fructibus. *The meat of anything, but most commonly flesh.*

*Carpō*, decerpo. *To crop, to bite off: or to gather: It is*

*also to lease or to chuse out, and sometime to taunt or rebuke: Carpere viam. To begin to journey: Carpere vitales auras, Carpere lanam, to toss wool: Carpere linum, to hatchel flax: Carpere cibum, to eat.*

*Castis*, reticulum, masc. pro galea form, est castis, idis, & hæc cassida. *A net or an helmet, in the feminine gender.*

*Castra*, locus in quo milites tentoria fixerunt. *The camp, the pavillion, or the Army.*

*Caro*, nomen viri. *A certain Roman's name.*

*Caveo*, diligentiam adhibeo, provideo, consulo, prospicio ne aliquid præter spem eveniat. *To beware, or to be wary and heedful: Cavere is also to put in assurance, and to save harmless by caution or sureties.*

*Caulis*, in herbis dicitur ipsum robur, five stipes. *A stalk.*

*Cedo*, to give place, to depart and go away.

*Cedrus*, arbor ingens & procera. *A Cedar tree.*

*Cello*, See Cello.

*Censeo*, existimo, puto, arbitror. *To deem, to judge, to suppose, to think, to tell ones mind: Some take it for to be angry: Censeri is also to be in books of subsidies, and to be taxed or valued.*

*Centum*, An hundred.

*Centussis*, centum librarum, *An hundred pound.*

*Cera*, illud quod melle ex favis expressio remanet. *Wax.*

*Cerno*, video. *To see: and by translation to perceive and understand: Sometime to decree and appoint: to sift, renege, or bolt, to sever and part, to fight, to go unto: as,*

*Cernere hereditatem.*

*Cetus*, piscis maxima whale.

*Cholera*, est ventriculi immodica perturbatio supra & infra per vomitum facta. *The colick: It is also choler, the hot and dry humour.*

*Cicer*, genus leguminis. *A certain Italian poase.*

*Cieo*, turbo, commovo. *To trouble, shake, and stir, and sometime for Cieo, it is to call.*

*Cinis*, vel ciner, pulvis, ashes. *Cinis, est avis quam alio nomine alaudam dicimus, a larh*

*Clauco*, obstruo, obfero. *To shut or close, to make fast, to stop or stay, not to suffer to pass: as, Ecce maris magna clauduit nos obice pontus.*

*Clivus*, locus molliter arduus & pro collo ponitur: a bank arising, also a little hill.

*Clunis*, natium tumor. *The buttock.*

*Cluo*, splendo. *To shine, to glister, sometime to fight.*

*Clypeus*, & clypeum scuta majora & præprie pedirum. *A buckler.*

*Cælum*, A graving tool, the sky, that is as much of the world as is above the element of fire, which is called æther, or, quintum elementum.

*Cælum* is also taken for the air, as, In hoc cælo qui dicitur aer.

*Cæno*, cenam sumo. *To sup, or to take supper.*

*Cæpio*, pro incipio, antiquum est. *To begin.*

*Cognosco*, nosco eos qui prius incogniti erant: *to know that which we knew not before: sometime diligently and attentively to consider or to understand, to search by an inquiry, & to sit in judgment.*

*Collis*, monticulus: *an hillock.*

*Colo*, adoro, veneror. *To honor, or worship with prayer, to exercise, to make much of, to inhabit, to love. Vitam colere, is to lead a life: sometime to plow or till the ground, sometime to deck or trim.*

*Colus*, instrumentum quod pensa continet. *A distaff or spindle.*

*Comes*, comitans, aut sequens. *A companion by the way, either man or woman.*

*Comaminifcor*, fingo, excogito, *To imagine, to feign, to invent and devise, to assay, to bring a man to the belief of that that is not.*

*Como*, comam compono, *To comb,*

# Nominum & Verborum interpretatio.

**Coma**, to dress the bush with a comb, or to deck and adorn.  
**Compago**, compaction & conjunctio. *A joyn.*

**Compedes**, vinculi genus. *A pair of fetters, or gyves.*

**Conditor**, qui aliquid facit. *A maker or builder.*

**Congrus**, conger, genus piscis. *A Congre.*

**Conjux**, maritus vel uxor. *A husband or wife.*

**Consulo**. To ask counsel, with an accusative: to give counsel, or provide for, with a dative: To take in good worth with a genitive. Sometime it is to sit in counsel, and to deliberate, but used plurally, as, *Consulum Senatores.*

**Coquo**, cibum usui aptum reddo. To dress meat, to play the cook, to prepare and go about: as, *Bellum coquere.* To vex & trouble: as *Coquit me cura.* To concoct, to bring out nutriment unto a natural ferment or juice.

**Cor**, præcipuum inter viscera, & vitæ sedes, & arteriarum, ac caloris nativi, quo anima regitur, quasi fons quidam & domicilium. The heart, and sometime it is used for the mind.

**Corbis**, vas ex viminibus factum. *A basket.*

**Cornus**, vel cornum, aut cornu, munimentum capitis quorundam animalium. *A horn.* By translation, the turning of rivers be called *Cornua.* It signifieth also the wing of an army, and the end of a thing.

**Cornus**, arbor ramos habens duritia & rigiditate cornibus similes, fructum circa sustitutum ferens, primo candidum, postea sanguineum, *A certain tree unknown among us.*

**Costus**, radix magni odoris, *A shrub growing in Arabia, Syria & Syria,* having a very fragrant savour, the which antiquity burned to their gods, as they did frankincense. **Conendix**, conarum vertex, quo femora vertuntur: The

*hip.*

**Crater**, vel cratera, vas amplum cui vinum aut oleum imponimus. *A goblet, or standing piece.*

**Crepeo**, sono. To crack. Sometime to complain, lament, and accuse: as, *quis post vina gravem pauperiem crepat?*

**Crepundia**, prima munuscula quæ pueris dantur: all manner of things that are given children in their infancy as corals, swadling-bands, daggers, timbrels, & such like.

**Cres**, Cretensis. *A man of candy.*

**Creta**, Insula est. The Isle called Candy.

**Crinis**, capillus. *Hair.*

**Crus**, pars a genibus usque ad inferiorem pedem: *a leg.*

**Crystallus**, glacies ex gelu vehementer concreta. *crystal.*

**Cubo**, jaceo. To lye, and sometime to be sick in bed.

**Cucumis**, *A Cucumer*, the which is called also in Latin *Cucumber.*

**Culex**, vermiculus alarus. *A Gnat.*

**Cumbo**, the same that *Cubo* is. *Cunabula*, *cunæ*. *A cradle.*

**Cunæ**, *cunabula*. Idem.

**Cupio**, opto, desidero. To covet, to desire, to lust for: and sometimes with a dative to favour.

**Cupressus**, arboris nomen. *A Cypress tree.*

**Curculio**, animal parvum frumentum corrodens. *A Weasel.*

**Cures**, oppidi nomen. *A towns name.*

**Curro**, celeriter eo, gradum præcipito, intenta celeritate viam quasi voro. To run, and sometime to flow, that is, to run as rivers do.

**Cuspis**, acutior pars hastæ. The point of a spear, pike, or partizan, or any other like.

**Custos**, qui vel quæ rem aliquam tuetur & curat. *A keeper man or woman.*

**Cyprus**, insula dives. *Cyprius the Isle.*

**Dama**, animal timidum. *A Buck or a Doe.*

**Damno**, damno afficio, vel

condemno. To damage or condemn.

**Dedo**, in perpetuum do, vel totum subdo, live in manus & arbitrium. To yield.

**Defrutum**, a deferendo vinum decoctum ad mediam partem: *wine sodden to half.*

**Dego**, ago. To live.

**Deleo**, expungo, proprie lineas aut regulas. To put out, and to cancel.

**Delicium**, oblectamentum quod nobis voluptati est. The thing wherein we take pleasure.

**Delphin**, vel delphinus, vel delphis, piscis maris, & signum cœlestis. *A dolphin.*

**Demo**, aufero. To pull away and to exempt.

**Dens**, notum est per similitudinem: capitur pro omni, quæ aliquid teri potest. *A tooth.*

**Depango**, defigo. To fasten down, and to plant.

**Desidia**, ignaviæ vitium. *Slothfulness.*

**Dico**, loquor, nomino. To speak, or to tell.

**Dies**, tempus viginti quatuor horarum. *A day.*

**Diffiteor**, inficias eo, nego. To deny.

**Digredior**, discedo. To go from.

**Diligo**, amo. To love.

**Diluo**, aqua vel quovis humore aliquid purgo: To purge with washing.

**Dindymus**, jugum montis Phrygiæ Idæ matri deum dicatum. The top of Ida, the hill by Troy.

**Diphthongus**, unus duarum vocalium sonus. *A double sound, a diphthong.*

**Dipteton**, nomen flexum duobus in casibus quibuscunque: *A noun declined with two cases whatsoever.*

**Diræ**, imprecationes, execrationes, & inferorum furie. *Curses, bannings, and the furies of hell.*

**Disco**, capio doctrinam. To learn.

**Dispersco**, separo, dirimo. To sever.

**Displaceo**: to displease.

*Disponis*

# Nominum & Verborum interpretatio.

**Ditionis**, imperii, dominii.  
Of my right & title. We need  
not scrupulously to refuse. **Dit-**  
**io** the nominative.

**Divido**, partior, to divide.  
**Divitia**, opes, amplæ for-  
tunæ: Riches.

**Do**, dono: to give.  
**Doces**, alicujus rei cognitio-  
nem alteri trado: to teach, &  
sometime to shew, and to de-  
clare, to warn, & to ascertain.

**Dodrans**, uncia novem:  
Nine ounces.

**Doleo**, tristis sum: to be  
sorrowful.

**Domo**, mansuetum facio:  
to tame.

**Domus**, ædificium ad habi-  
tandum factum: an house.

**Duco**, notum est, to lead,  
to marry, to account.

**Dulcedo**, suavitas: Sweetness.  
**Dux**, qui vel quæ ducit ali-  
quem: a guid, man or woman.

**E**  
**Equus**: Whether any.

**Edo**, comedo: to eat.

**Edo**, i. emitto, & quasi ex-  
trudo: to set out & evulgate,  
and sometime to exhibit and  
shew, as, edere spectacula.

**Edere** animam, & to die. The  
signification of it in all other  
phrases may be reduced to the  
first signification.

**Edoceo**, diligenter doceo:  
thoroughly or perfectly to  
teach.

**Effata**, sunt ultimæ precati-  
ones augurum post finem  
auspiciorum extra urbem  
dictæ, the prayers that Sooth-  
sayers said, after notice taken  
of birds flying before they  
enter the city.

**Egeo**, careo: to need.

**Elephas**, elephantus, animal  
fama notum: an Elephant.

**Els**, civitas Arcadiæ: a City  
in Arcadia, or a Country in  
Peloponnesus.

**Emineo**, præ aliis appareo,  
vel excello: to appear before  
others, and to pass them.

**Emo**, comparo, merco: to  
buy.

**Ensis**, gladius: a sword.

**Epasco**. To eat up, to con-  
sume with feeding, and to  
leave nothing.

**Epulum**, quasi edipulum,  
est celebre convivium: a  
banquet or feast.

**Eques**, homo equo infidens:  
an horseman, or he or she  
that rideth.

**Eremus**, locus desertus: a  
desert or wilderness.

**Eripio**, extra rapio: to pull  
out.

**Esurio**, famem patior: to  
hunger.

**Eventus**, eventum quod casu  
aut fortuna nobis evenit.

**Hap**, or that which cometh to  
pass.

**Excludo**, extra claudio: to  
shut out.

**Excubia**, vigiliæ diurnæ &  
nocturnæ: Watchings and  
wardings.

**Exculpo**, perfecte scalpo, vel  
scalpendo conficio: to carve,  
to grave, to cut out, to scratch  
out; as, Oculum exculpere:

to wrest or wring out; as,  
Verum exculpere.

**Excurro**, extra curro, vel  
præcurro: to run out, or to  
out-run before, to amount to a  
great deal, to make an out-  
road, or an excursion.

**Excuso**, extra culpam red-  
do; to excuse.

**Excutio**, ejicio, emitto; to  
smite out.

**Exequie**, funebre officium:  
the ceremonies of the burial.

**Exlex**, sine lege vivens: a  
lawless man or woman.

**Expergisco**, evigilo; to  
awaken.

**Experior**, tento vel tentor:  
to prove or to be proved.

**Explico**, extendo, & declaro:  
to stretch out, and to declare.

**Extæ**, proprie cor, jecur &  
pulmo dicuntur the entrails.

**Extorrens**, exul, a banished  
man or woman.

**Exul**, qui vel quæ exulat;  
a banished man or woman.

**Exuo**, exolvere. denudo: To  
put off, to unclash.

**Exuvias**, ab exuendo: The  
things that we put off.

**F**  
**Facies**: A face.

**Facio**, aliquid ago: To  
make.

**Facesso**, facio vel eo ad faci-  
endum: To make, or to go to  
make.

**Fallo**, decipio: to deceive.

**Fames**, edendi cupiditas  
Hunger.

**Far**, Once a general word  
for any kind of grain or corn  
as, Triticum far, hordeace-  
um, filigineum, &c. but now  
it signifieth one certain kind  
called Ador, which is bread-  
corn.

**Fario**, saturo, impleo, pin-  
guofacio, sagino; To stuff, to  
fill, to satiate, and to make fat.

**Fas**, pium, religiosum, &  
dignum factu: Lawful, right  
godly, and worth the doing.

**Fascia**, lignorum aut alicujus  
rei congeries; A faggot.

**Fasti**, libri in quibus totius  
anni res populi Romani  
scriptæ continebantur, &  
causæ festivitatum explica-  
bantur; A register for the or-  
der of things for the whole  
year.

**Fasti dies**, were days  
wherein the Judges might  
give sentence, without as-  
sistence of the gods with these  
three solemn words of the  
Law, Do, dico, addico. Ne-  
fasti dies; were their con-  
trary days.

**Fateor**, annuo, concedo: to  
grant, and to assent unto.

**Fatisco**, deficio, aut defati-  
gor; abundantly to gape.

**Fatiscor**, fessus sum; To be  
weary, to faint, and to be  
weak.

**Faveo**, recte alicui opto: To  
favour.

**Fel**, purgamentum sangui-  
nis; the Gall.

**Feria**, dies cessationum ab  
opere; Holy days, or times of  
pastime used.

**Ferio**, percutio; to strike.

**Fero**, To bear, or to suffer, to  
lead or tell, to give, to co-  
vet or advance, to bring  
forth, to have, to take away,  
to obtain: To ask advice, as  
Pompeius tulit ad popu-  
lum.

**Ferveo**, valde caleo: To be  
hot.

**Ferveſco**, caleſco: To warm  
hot.

**F**  
**F**

**F**

**F**

**F**

**F**

**F**

**F**



# Nominum & Verborum interpretatio.

**Vitis**, arbor vel morbus. *A Fig-tree, or a certain bile rising in the fundament.*

**Fides**, constantia in omnibus rebus. *Faith and trust.*

**Fido**, fiduciam & spem habeo. *To have trust.*

**Figo**, to fasten, to plant, to smite with arrow, or such like.

**Vilix**, herba sine caule, sine flore, sine semine. *Fern, wherof there be two kinds, as in Herbaries you shall see.*

**Filum**, illud subtile quod ex lino lanave trahendo ducitur. *A thread.*

**Fimus**, latamen & excrementa animalium, quibus agri stercoantur. *Dung. It is also Fimum in the neuter gender.*

**Findo**, dissecō, diffindo. *To cleave.*

**Fingo**, formo. *To fashion.*

**Finis**, extremitas five terminus in unaquaque re, an end. *Fio, efficior. To be made.*

**Flaveo**, flavus sum. *To be yellow.*

**Flecto**, inclino, volvo, duco, moveo. *To bow, to move, and to cause to follow.*

**Fleo**, lachrymo. *To weep.*

**Flo**, spiro. *To blow.*

**Flas**, dictus qui ex arboribus vel herbis colligitur, a flower.

**Fluo**, decurro, proprie ut liquores. *To flow.*

**Fodio**, terram eruo. *To dig.*

**Folus**, instrumentum quo extrahitur atque emittitur ventus. *A pair of bellows.*

**Fons**, scatebra. *A well.*

**Forceps**, instrumentum quo venetur aliquid. *A pair of tongs.*

**Forx**, instrumentum sartorum, quo aliquid scinditur. *A pair of scissars.*

**Fors**, fortuna, casus. *Hap.*

**Forum**, a ferendo, quia lites & venalia illuc feruntur. *The Judicial place, and then it is named Forum Judiciale: or the market-place, and it is called Forum venale.*

**Fungo**, rumpo, destruo. *To break.*

**Frenum**, vel frænum, in-

strumentum quo equum infessor coarctat. *A bridle.*

**Fricō**, scalpo. *To rub.*

**Frigeo**, frigidus sum. *To be cold.*

**Frugi**, indeclinabile omnis generis, utilis, necessarius, frugalis. *Good, profitable, and thrifty.*

**Frugis**, ejus quod ex terra fructu in alimoniam vertimus. *Of corn or pulse: Some make the nominative hereof Fruges, and some Frux, the former is not to be misliked.*

**Frui**, delectationem & fructum capio, & alor, to take pleasure, or fruit and profit of, and to be fed.

**Fuga**, fugiendi actus. *Flying or running away.*

**Fugio**, vito, currendo relinquo. *To fly from, to avoid.*

**Fulcio**, sustineo, munio. *To under-prop, and to shore.*

**Fundo**, liquefacio, vel liquidum spargo. *To melt or to pour.*

**Fusus**, restis. *A rope.*

**Fur**, qui vel quæ alteri subtrahit. *A man or woman thief.*

**Furfur**, purgamentum farina: *Bray or scurf.*

**Furo**, insanio. *To be mad.*

**Fusus**, baculus. *A club.*

**G**

**Gabii** Volscorum urbs. *A town in Italy seventy miles from Rome.*

**Gallia**, Europæ pars, sita intra Pireneos montes, inter Hispaniam, Germaniamque & duo maria, Oceanum Britannicum & mare nostrum. *France.*

**Garama**, Libyæ incolæ. *A certain inhabitants of Africa.*

**Gargarm**, unus ex collibus montis Idæ. *A very high top of the hill Ida: There is also a town of that name at the foot of the same hill.*

**Gaudeo**, lator. *To rejoice.*

**Gelu**, proprie glacies.

*Frost or ice.*

**Genu**, curvatura, qua crus & femur connectuntur, a knee.

**Gero**, porto. *To bear.*

**Gibbus**, & gibber, solidus in dorso tumor. *A hump or bunch.*

**Gigas**, vir altissima statu-

ra: *A Giant.*

**Gigno**, genero. *To beget.*

**Gingiber**, herba in Arabia nascens. *Ginger.*

**Glis**, animal muri simile. *A dormouse.*

**Glisco**, cresco, augeor, invalesco. *To increase and grow, to wax strong, to wax fat, and much to desire, & sore to covet.*

**Glacies**, glutinum aut colla.

*Glue.*

**Gorgon**, nomen mulieris. *A certain terrible woman.*

**Gradior**, eo, incedo, progredior. *To go.*

**Græcia**. *The Country of Greece, a great piece of Europe, which is now under the Turk.*

**Grajugena**, Græcus. *A Grecian born.*

**Grando**, gutta aquæ in aere congelatæ. *Hail.*

**Grates**, gratæ relatæ pro accepto beneficio. *Thanks.*

**Grex**, pecudum multitudo. *A flock.*

**Grossus**, siue abortiva, quæ non maturascit. *A rash ripe fig.*

**Grno**, ut grues gruere dicuntur. *To cry like a crane.*

**Grus**, avis nota. *A crane.*

**Gryps**, animal pennatum, omni ex parte leoni simile. *A Griffon.*

**Gummi**, liquor glutinosus, ex arboribus resudans. *Gum.*

**Gurgulio**, pars gutturis a naribus ad pulmonem, vel animal. *The Windpipe, or a Weasel.*

**H**

**Habeo**, possideo, teneo. *To have.*

**Hæreo**, archè alicui rei infigor. *To cleave unto.*

**Heres**, qui succedit in hereditatem alterius. *An heir.*

**Halee**, piscis qui sola aqua nutritur. *A Herning.*

**Haurio**, extraho humorem, & educo ex profundo aliquo loco. *To draw.*

**Hæros**, vir illustis & nobilis. *A nobleman, a man of great excellency in worthy*

*parts, and therein more like a god than a man.*

**Hesperus**, serotina stella. *The evening star.*



## Nominum & Verborum interpretatio.

**Heteroclitum**, nomen secus, quam declinationum canones possunt flexum: *A word declined otherwise than the bare rules of the declensions do require.*

**Hilaris**, vel hilarus, jucundus, lætus: *Merry.*

**Hippomanes**, virus ab equa collectum vel earuncula in fronte pulli equini, hominem ad insaniam redigens. *Poyson to procure love withal, or a little piece of flesh growing in the colts foreshed, when it is first foaled.*

**Hirundo**, avis notissima: *A Swallow.*

**Histrix**, animal ex herinaceorum genere: *A Porcupine.*

**Homo**, notæ significationis: *A man or a woman.*

**Honor**, vel honos, est reverentia quam alicui exhibemus in virtutis testimonium: *Honour, worship.*

**Hordeum**, ab horrore, quoniam hordeum quam frumento aristæ est mordacior: *Barley.*

**Hospes**, qui vel quæ ad hospitium recipit, aut recipitur, & capitur pro peregrino: *An host or an hostess, or a guest, man or woman.*

**Hostis**, inimicus, peregrinus: *An enemy.*

**Huber**, fertilis, abundans, & mamma pecoris & hominis: *Plentiful, or a dug, or the udder of any beast.*

**Humus**, terra humefacta: *The ground.*

**Hydrops**, aqua intercus: *The dropsie.*

**Hiems**, bruma: *Winter.*

### I

**Iaceo**, decumbo: *To lie.*  
**Jacio**, emitto, ac vi impello: *To cast, to hurle, to lay, as jacere fundamentum: or by translation it is to make a beginning. Jacio is sometime to spread abroad by rumour, and sometime to object against one with an accusative, with this preposition In.*

**Jaspis**, lapis preciosus. *A green precious stone, whereof there be divers kinds and degrees of divers colours.*

**Ico**, ferio, percutio: *To strike, to smite, as, Icere colaphum. Icere fœdus, is to strike up a bargain.*

**Icon**, imago: *An image.*

**Ida**, mons altissimus Troici soli: *A hill in the Country of Troy.*

**Idus**, dies qui dividunt mensem: *In March, May, June and October, it is the fiftieth day, in the rest the thirtieth.*

**Jecur**, hepar: *The Liver.*

**Ignis**, unum ex quatuor elementis: *Fire.*

**Illex**, qui sine lege vivit: *A lawless body, man or woman.*

**Imber**, agmen aquarum largius ex nubibus effusum: *A shower.*

**Imbrex**, canalis, vel tegula curva & obtorta, per quam imber defluit: *A gutter tyle.*

**Immineo**, inito, to hang over.

**Impetis**, violentiæ, invasionis: *Of violence or boisterousness.*

**Incesso**, acculo, impeto: *To accuse, to revile, to provoke, to invade, and enter into.*

**Incido**, ferio, seco. *To cut, to grave in.*

**Incido**, in aliquid, vel super aliquid cado: *To fall into by hap, to run into, as, Incidi in errorem: And sometime to happen, or to chance.*

**Incipio**, inchoo: *To begin, to take in hand, to enterprize.*

**Inculco**, eadem sapius iterando ingero: *Often to repeat.*

**Indo**, Impono, to put in.

**Indoles**, facilis significatio futuræ probitatis: *towardsness, or likely disposition.*

**Inducia**, pax in paucos dies: *A truce.*

**Indulgeo**, obsequor: *to set much by, and to give to.*

**Inermis**, vel inermis, qui armatus non est: *Unarmed.*

**Insans**, homo per ætatem nondum sciens fari: *A babe.*

**Inferia**, sacrificia quæ inferius solvuntur: *Sacrifice done to spirits in hell. Hereof Inferias facere, is, Manes sacrificiis placare, that is, to celebrate obites and obsequies.*

**Inficias**, negationem, se vel

debere quod actor potest, vel commississe quod accusator obicit: *A denial, and to followeth only the Verb Eo.*

**Inficio**, intingo, vitio, seu maculo: *to dye, or to infect.*

**Ingruo**, invado, impetum facio: *to give an onset, and to invade.*

**Injussa**, absque authoritate, & temere, sine jussione: *Without bidding.*

**Insidia**, dolosa expectatio ad hominem aggrediendum, fallacia: *A lying in wait for, or a deceit.*

**Instar**, significat vel similitudinem, vel æquiparationem & mensuram: *Like, or as big, or the image.*

**Intellego**, capio, to understand  
**Interpres**, qui autores declarat, aut aliquid ex lingua in linguam transfert: *An interpreter, man or woman, or a translator.*

**Invidia**, mœror ex aliena prosperitate: *Envy, sorrow for another man's welfare, or else the evil will and despight of a man.*

**Jocus**, est quidam lepor & festivitas in verbis: *A merry scoff.*

**Irascor**, ira stipulor: *to be angry.*

**Ismarus**, mons Thraciæ asper, & incultus ex una parte, ex alia fertilis vinetis & olivetis, a hill in Thracia so named.

**Iter**, itio, actus eundi: *A journey.*

**Jubar**, sol, vel ipsius splendor: *the sun beam.*

**Jubeo**, impero, to command.

**Judex**, qui vel quæ judicat: *A judge, he or she.*

**Jugerus**, agri tantum quantum ab uno pari aut jugo boum uno die arari potest. *Plinius. We call it an acre. The authors do vary in the measure of it: for the commodity of the nominative brother cases, we may use Jugerum.*

**Jugum**, vertex sive cacumen montis, the top of an hill: *It is also a yoke, or a yoke of oxen, that is a couple: By metaphor it is a servitude or a bondage.*

# Nominum & Verborum interpretatio.

**bandage.** Also a Weavers beam, or a pair of gallows, such as for ignominy the Romans went under. Tribus hastis jugum fit, humi fixis duobus, superque eas transversa una deligata.

**Jungo,** copulo, & quasi in unum ago; to joyn.

**Juno,** dea, Jovis uxor; the goddess Jupiter's wife.

**Juro,** juramentum facio; to swear.

**Jus,** quod natura, aut civitas, aut gens jubet, & liquor eorum quæ coquuntur; the law and right, and the broth of any thing sodden.

**Jussu,** imperio, jussione: by commandment.

**Justa,** idem quod exequiæ.

**Justitium,** jura dicendi intermissio; No term.

**Juvenis,** qui adolescentium excohit atatem: One come to man's age.

**Juventus,** ætas juvenilis: Man's state.

**Juvo,** auxilium do, to help.

**L**

**Labes,** hiatus, macula, dedecus, a great chap, a spot, a dishonour, or reproach.

**Labor,** vel labos, opera, defatigatio: Labor & toil, pains-taking, sometimes it is misery, calamity, peril, danger, travail.

**Lac,** succus maternus, quo animalia nutriuntur: Milk.

**Lateſſo,** vexo, incito, provoeco; to trouble, to provoke.

**Latio,** in fraudem ducio; to allure or to entice.

**Laster,** gracilliora intestina; the small guts.

**Lasso,** lac emitto, vel per blanditias decipio; to give milk, or to deceive.

**Lacus,** locus profundus cum aquis per petuis ibidem natis, qui efficit rivos; a lake, a mead, or meyre.

**Lado,** verbo factove aliquid offendio; to hurt.

**Lalaps,** nomen cujusdam canibus Aëæonis: One of Aëon's dogs: called Lalaps, for speedy fierceness. For Lalaps significat a Whirl-

wind, a tempest, and a storm.

**Lambo,** lingua lingo, to lick.

**Lampas,** ignis aut solis splendor, a fire, or brightness of the sun, or a lamp.

**Lanista,** qui domi gladiatorum docet, & populo vendit; a master of defence.

**Laquear,** pars superior cubiculi parum convexa; a vaulted roof of a parlour.

**Laſer,** herba quædam & succus qui ex culmo laſerpitii exudat; the herb out of which cometh the juice that the Apothecaries do call Aſa dulcis, and Belzoe, or Belzoin, the common people call it Benjamin.

**Lateo,** abscondor, non compareo; to lurk, or to be hidden.

**Lavo,** aqua purgo, to wash.

**Laurus,** genus arboris; a Bay-tree.

**Lebes,** vas æneum, a caldron, or a pan.

**Lecythus,** ampulla olearia; a box for oyl and ointment: It is taken also for eloquence in writing.

**Lego,** notum est, to read.

**Leumures,** larvæ nocturnæ, & terrificationes imaginum: Hobgoblins or night-spirits.

**Leo,** animal ferrox, a Lyon.

**Leo,** imprimo, formo, to imprint, to form, abusivum.

**Lethum,** mors, interitus: Death.

**Liberi,** pignora: Children. One son or one daughter may be called Liberi, and so may Nephews and their Successors.

**Libet,** placet: It pleaseth.

**Libs,** ventus africanus; the south-west-wind, by west.

**Licet,** fas est; It is lawful.

**Lichen,** herba vel gravissimum morbi genus: Liverwort, the Apothecaries call it Hepatica. It is also the kind of Leptry called a sauce-steam, in Latine Imperigior.

**Lien,** splen, the milt. Dicitur & lienis in nominativo.

**Ligur,** incola Liguriæ, an Italian of the Country of Liguria.

**Limax,** testudo & cochlea terrestris, the shelled snail, & the dew snail.

**Linus,** vestis genus ab umbilico ad pedes, seu lutum aut cœcum mollius, a kind of garment, or else slime or mud.

**Lingo,** lambo, id est, aliquid lingua molliiter tango, to lick.

**Lino,** aliquid alicui rei superinducio; to damb.

**Linquo,** committo, pecco; to leave, to trespass.

**Linter,** navicula cavata arbore facta; a Cock-boat.

**Liqueſco,** liqueſco; to be molten.

**Liquor,** liqueo; Idem.

**Livo,** lividus sum, id est, sordidus; to be wan or filthy.

**Lixa,** coquus in exercitu, vel qui sequitur quæstus gratia; the scullion that waiteth on an Army.

**Locri,** urbs in Brutlis; a town in Italy.

**Locus,** proprie illud quod aliquid continet; a place.

**Logos,** sermo, ratio, verbum; Speech, reason, a word.

**Loquor,** verba quæcunque profero; to speak.

**Luceo,** lucem emitto; to be light.

**Ludo,** ludum exerceo, joco; to play or to sport.

**Lues,** cum in urbe aut in agro febris aliv live morbi genus, homines aut pecora, aut utrosque corrumpit; a common disease or murren.

**Lugeo,** to bewail, to lament a thing, or else absolutely to mourn, and sometime to be a mourner in apparel.

**Luo,** solvo, pœnas do; to redeem, to cleanse, to pay for.

**Lustra,** habitacula ferarum; Dens of wild beasts, or brother-houses, and petty tipling-houses of bawdry.

**Lynx,** animal maculeſum, acutissime videns; Our men call this beast an Ounce.

**M**

**Mænalis,** mons quidam Arcadiæ, a hill of that name in Arcadia.

**Magnes,** lapis ferrum attrahens; a stone that draweth iron

# Nominum & Verborum interpretatio?

*iron unto it. It is called also Heraclius lapis, or sideritis. Majores, avi, abavi, proavi, atavi, tritavi, & quicunque ante hos in infinitum, Our ancestors.*

*Malo, magis velim; to will rather.*

*Mando, comedo, vel committo; to eat or to commit.*

*Maneo, sisto, & expecto; to tarry, or to tarry for.*

*Manes, dii inferi inter Numina, læva: Spirits or devils.*

*Manubia, quæ manu capiuntur ab hostibus: Spoils taken in war.*

*Manus, membrum notum: A hand.*

*Mapalia, agrestes casæ; Sheepcoats or small cottages.*

*Mare, pelagus; the sea.*

*Margo, cufusque rei extremitas; the brink or skirt of any thing, or the bank of a river or sea.*

*Marmor, lapidis genus: Marble.*

*Mars, Deus belli: the name of the God of War.*

*Martyr, testis: A witness, man or woman.*

*Mat, vir; A man.*

*Massicus, mons Campaniæ optimi vini ferax: An hill in that part of Italy that is called Campania, fruitful of pleasant wines.*

*Mater, nota est significatio; A mother.*

*Medeor, do medelam: to cure.*

*Medicor, medeor, remedium adfero: Idem.*

*Meio, mingo, to piss.*

*Mel, liquamen dulce: Honey.*

*Meleager, vel Meleagrus, Oenei Pætolia regis filius; A man's name.*

*Menda, & mendum, error, erratum; A fault.*

*Menses, mulierum profuvium; Womens flowers.*

*Menfis, tempus Lunæ curriculo confectum: A month.*

*Mereor, aliquid facio, quamobrem dignus sum, qui obtineam præmium, vel poenam patiar; to deserve.*

*Meridies, dies medius; Noon or the noon day.*

*Metior, pondero, mensuro, confidero; to measure.*

*Metio, seco, amputo herbam, vel tegetem; to mow.*

*Metuo, timeo; to fear.*

*Metuor, timeor; to be feared.*

*Meus, mine.*

*Mico, fulgeo cum motu, vel tremore: Often with certain intermissions to shine, and likewise to be moved, to put forth fingers to him with whom we play. Will put forth which is called Micare digitis.*

*Miles, qui vel quæ militiam exercet: A warrior, a soldier.*

*Mina, metus incussiones per verba aut signa, threatnings. Mingo, urinam facio; to piss.*

*Minores, posterius, etiam post trinepotes futuri; Our successors.*

*Misceo, to mingle, to serve drink, sometime to trouble.*

*Misereor, misericordia afficior; to take pity on.*

*Mitto, ad aliquem do; to send.*

*Munia, muri urbis, the walls of a Town, and figuratively the Town itself.*

*Mureo, tristior, dolore afficior; to be heavy, sad, in a dump or mourning.*

*Monopoton, nomen non flexum, sed carens omni casu præterquam uno, & eo obliquo; A noun having one termination, and that in one oblique case.*

*Mons, terræ tumor altissimus; An hill.*

*Mordeo, dentibus lædo; to bite.*

*Morior, e vita discedo; to die.*

*Mos, vitæ institutum consuetudine firmatum; a custom.*

*Mulceo, lenio; to assuage.*

*Mulgeo, lac e mammis exprimo; to milk.*

*Mulier, quæ non est virgo: A woman.*

*Mulsum, potus ex vino & melle; a certain wine confect with honey.*

*Multiplio, adaugeo; to multiply or increase.*

*Munia, onera legi debita, & officia quæ publice præstantur; a duty or office.*

*Mus, exiguum animal; a mouse.*

**N**

*Nasciscor, acquiro; to get and to obtain.*

*Nascor, orior, in mundum venio; to be born.*

*Natalis, conditio sanguinis & familiaris; the degree of blood and gentry, & generosi natales, natales obscuri; It is also taken for years: Sex milia natales ierant, there were passed six years: It is also used for the origine or first string of things.*

*Natalis, dies alicui natalis; A Birth-day.*

*Natrix, serpens aquaticus; a water-serpent, that with poison infecteth the water.*

*Natu, ætate, partu; by age or by birth.*

*Neco, quacunquē re occido; to kill.*

*Necto, ligo, conjungo; to knit.*

*Nefrens, porculus per ætatem fabam frangere nondum potens; a young pig.*

*Negligo, contemno, non curo: Not to pass on, to contemn.*

*Nigreo, niger fio; to become black.*

*Nemo, ne homo; No body, man or woman.*

*Neco, filum torqueo; to spin.*

*Nerum, motus sensusque instrumentum; a snem.*

*Neuter, Neither of both.*

*Nexo, ligo velnecto; to bind.*

*Nideo, splendeo; to shine.*

*Nihil, rei cuiusvis privatio, Nothing.*

*Nihilum, rei cuiusvis privatio Nil: Vide nihil.*

*Nitor, conor, ago sedulo; to go about, to endeavour.*

*Niveo, est oculorum & aliorum membrorum nibe aliquid conari; to give a token with the eyes, to wink.*

*No, nato; to swim.*

*Neco, malum infero; to hurt or to harm.*

*Nocturn, nocte: By night.*

*Nolo, renuo, non volo; to nil.*

*Nona, quasi nova, propter initium observationis: Erant autem in Martio, Maio, Junio & Octobri, sex illi dies qui celerat sequebantur, in reliquis quatuor.*

# Nominum & Verborum interpretatio.

quatuor: the nones of a month.

Nosco, rem certam habeo: to know.

Noſter: Ours.

Noſtras: Of our Country, ſhall, or faction.

Notus, ventus moridionalis, quem nos auſtrum appellamus: the ſouth wind.

Nubes, vapor humidus ſublime egreſſus: a cloud.

Nupto, viro trador: to be married to a man, for it is in the woman's part only.

Nuga, cum nihil agimus: trifles.

Nulus: None.

Nundinum, dies & conventus ſtatus rerum mercatui: a fair.

Nus: a verb not much in uſe: the compounds thereof be commonly received, and is ſignifieth to nod.

Nuptia, legitima conjunctio maris & ſœminæ in vitæ ſocietatem: Marriage.

Nurus, filii uxor: a daughter in law.

Nycticorax, corvus nocturnus: a night raven.

Obo, oppono, ſive appono: to ſet againſt.

Obex, obſectum aliquod, vel obſtaculum, ut peſſulum, ſera: a bar or ſtop.

Obliviſcor, e memoria aliquid excidere ſino: to forget.

Obſer, qui vel quæ traditur in fidem alteri: an hoſtage or pledge, man or woman.

Occido: to fall or periſh, and to be ſlain, to ſet as the ſun ſets.

Occido: to kill or ſlay.

Ocſipus, poſterior pars capitis: the hinder part of the head.

Ocludo, claudio: to ſhut.

Oculo, abſcondo, abdo: to hide.

Oculo: Idem.

October, menſis octavus a Martio, the tenth month in our year, called October.

Oder, vel odos, quaſi olor ab oleo: eſt autem infectus ſer: a ſavour.

Oleaſter, olea ſylveſtris: a

certain ſhrub like the Olive tree, the Greeks call it the wild Olive, or the ground Olive, for the lowneſs.

Olea, odorem ſpiro & emitto: to give a ſmell, & that indifferently, ſo that the differences be made with Bene & Male.

Obſacio, odor: to ſwell or to ſavour a thing: by tranſlation it is to perceive and find, to foreſee.

Omen, augurium quod fit ore haſſoning, & foreſpeaking.

Omnis: Every one.

Onus, pondus alicui injunctum: a burden.

Onyx, unguis & gemma: the nail of a man's hand, a precious ſtone white like a nail, the haw in a man's eye.

Operio, tego: to cover.

Opifex, qui opus facit: a workman.

Opis, adminiculi, præſidii: Of aid and help.

Oppango, circumſigo, circumplanto: to ſteer, or to join unto, or plant about.

Opus, Opuntis, nomen Civitatis in Locris: a towns name in the country of Locri.

Orbis, circulus mundi, res rotunda: a globe, or a bowl, and therefore the world is called Orbis, becauſe it is every way round like a bowl.

Ordior, incipio: to begin, or to commence.

Ordior, id eſt, texo: to weave.

Oriens, regio Orientalis: the Eaſt.

Orior, naſcor, furgo, incipio: to ſpring, to riſe, to begin.

Orontes, nomen viri & fluvii: a man's name, or a certain river in Syria, now called Taxyſaro.

Os, oris concavum illud intra quod ſunt dentes & lingua: a mouth.

Os, oſſis, ſolidamentum corporis durum: a bone.

Oſtrea, conchæ ſpecies: an oſter.

Ovum: an Egge.

Pacifcor, pactum facio, convenio: to make a bargain, to fall to an accord, ſometimes to promiſe.

Paleo, parum albeo: to be pale.

Pampinus, vitis ramus: a vine branch.

Pando, aperio, patefacio: to open.

Pango, pacifcor, cano, jungo, plango, figo: to bargain, to ſing, to join, to nail, to ſteer.

Pann, quo paſcimur: bread.

Panther, & Panthera, animal quoddam Pardo ſimile: a certain beaſt.

Papaver, genus herbæ ſoporiferum: Poppy.

Papyrus, charta qua utimur in literis ſcribendis: a certain ſort of ruſh growing in the marſh of Egypt, ſomewhat high, whereof they made a kind of paper, and called it Papyrus, whereof our paper now is called likewiſe.

Paradiſus, locus amœniſſimus: a place of pleaſure.

Parco, abſtineo ab ultione: To ſpare.

Parens, pater aut mater, avus aut avia: a father or mother, a grandfather or grandmother.

Pareo, obedio: To obey: To bring forth.

Parvo, prolem produco.

Parnassus, mons in Phocide duos vertices habens: an hill in Phocis, a country in Greece.

Partio, divido, & quaſi partes facio: To part or to divide.

Parturio, cupio, aut conor parere: To be toward labour.

Paſco, nutrio: To feed, to nourish.

Paſcor, nutrior, alor: To be fed.

Paſſer, avis ſalaciſſima: a Sparrow.

Patteo, apertus ſum: To be open.

Pasior, ſuſtineo, tolero: To ſuffer, or to abide.

Patro, aliquid mali committo: To commit ſome evil.

Patruelles, patruorum filii: Brothers children.

Paveo, timeo: To fear.

Peſten, inſtrumentum textorum, & dentatum: a comb, or a weavers ſtay.

Peſto, orno capillos: To comb the hair.

Perco,

# Nominum & Verborum interpretatio.

**Pecu**, cudis, oris, omne animal quod sub hominis imperio pabulo terræ pascitur; *a castle.*

**Pedes**, qui pedibus incedit; *a footman.*

**Pedo**, ventris crepitum facio; *to fart.*

**Pelagus**, mare; *the sea.*

**Pellex**, mulier impudica; *a harlot.*

**Pello**, eicio, removeo, *to drive or put away.*

**Penates**, dii domestici, quod penes nos nati sunt; *Household gods.*

**Pendeo**, suspensus sum, *to be hanged.*

**Pendo**, suspendo, vel pondero, æstimo; *to hang, to weigh, to prize.*

**Penn**, cauda; *a tail, and at the last it was taken for a man's yard.*

**Pennis**, vel penum, omne esculentum poculentum, quo homines vescuntur; *all manner of viuals.*

**Perago**, perficio; *to finish, and to perfect business.*

**Percutio**, serio; *to smite.*

**Perdix**, avis nota; *a Partridge.*

**Perdo**, amitto; *to lose.*

**Perduellū**, hostis; *an enemy in the war.*

**Pergamus**, civitas insignis Asiae, in ditione Trojanorum, the City of the Trojans, otherwise called Ilium or Ilion.

**Pergo**, in re procedo, abeo; *to go forward.*

**Perlego**, totum lego; *wholly and thoroughly to read.*

**Permissu**, permissione cum nemo adversatur. *By sufferance, with leave and license.*

**Perpetior**, multum cum labore ac dolore parior; *thoroughly to bear or suffer.*

**Perplaceo**, valde placeo; *to please very much, or thoroughly to please.*

**Perfis**, orientalis regio; *the Country of Persia.*

**Pes**, ima pars corporis qua gradimur; *a foot.*

**Pete**, oro, obsecro, rogo; *to ask.*

**Phalera**, ornamenta eorum; *Horje-trappings.*

**Pharus**, turris altissima in portu quæ lucet navigantibus; *a watch tower.*

**Phaselus**, navicula velox & oblonga; *a brigantine.*

**Philota**, nomen mulieris; *a womans name.*

**Phanix**, avis in oriente, a Phœniceo pennarum colore dicta, toto orbe celeberrima, in Arabia nascens, aquilæ magnitudine. *Phœnix the bird.*

**Phryx**, vir Phrygiæ, a Trojan.

**Pietas**, pius cultus; *godliness.*

**Piger**, dolet, seu molestum est; *It irketh.*

**Pingo**, formam alicujus re ductis lineis repræsentō; *to paint.*

**Pingo**, tundo, panem conficio; *to smite with the beak, to beat in a mortar, as once they did their grain, and thereof to bake.*

**Pinus**, arbor est piceæ generis, nuces ferens omnium maximas, quas Latini pineas vocant; *a Pine tree.*

**Piper**, herba; *Pepper.*

**Piscu**, animal quod continue sub aquis degit; *a fish.*

**Pix**, resina ex arboribus fluens; *Pitch.*

**Placeo**, gratus sum; *to please.*

**Plaga**, retia latiora ad capiendas feras; *Hunting nets, or wide meaped nets to take beasts.*

**Plaudo**, manibus percutio, ac gestu lætitiā indico; *to clap hands for joy.*

**Plebs**, vel plebis idem quod vulgus; *the common people.*

**Plecto**, supplicio afficio, punio, serio; *to punish, to beat.*

**Pleo**, plenum facio; *to fill.*

**Plico**, contraho, & rugas facio; *to fold, or to plait.*

**Pluo**, aquam dimitto; *to rain.*

**Plus**, vox incrementi, more.

**Polleo**, possum, valeo; *to be able, to be of power, and sometime it is taken for to pass, or to be better, or more profitable.*

**Pono**, colloco, constituo, *to set or to put.*

**Pons**, asser, vel quoddam aliud per quod super aqua transitimus; *a bridge.*

**Pontus**, mare; *the sea.*

**Porticus**, ampla domus, propter repentinos imbras deambulationis gratia edificata; *a gallery, or an ambulatory.*

**Potco**, peto, *to ask, to require.*

**Posta**, latus portæ, sive janua; *a post.*

**Poto**, bibo; *to drink.*

**Præcordia**, quæ extra sepe- rant ab inferiore viscerum parte; *the midriff.*

**Præcurro**, antecurro, sive cito ante eo; *to run before.*

**Prælego**, antelego, ut solent præceptores suis discipulis, *to be an interpreter, or a reader, and sometime to suit, or to sail by.*

**Præminco**, præcello; *to excel others.*

**Præneste**, nomen urbis; *a town in Italy.*

**Præst**, sponsor qui se obligat, id est, sivejussor in litis nummaria; *a surety.*

**Præses**, qui vel quæ præsidet; *He or she that superintendeth.*

**Præsul**, qui vel quæ præest; *Idem.*

**Prændeo**, prandium sumo, vel ante prandium cibum sumo; *to dine.*

**Præco**, precationis, obsecrationis. *Of prayer, or petition.*

**Præmo**, *to press, to be against and to vex, to pursue and to be hard at hand with, to drive, to hide, to expel, to shut, to despoil, to kill, &c.*

**Primitia**, primi fructus ex agro percepti, qui Deo offeruntur. *First fruits of a man's ground, or the firstlings of any other thing.*

**Princeps**, qui vel quæ principatum obtinet. *The Prince or Princeps.*

**Problema**, propositio interrogationem annexam habens. *A demand.*

**Prodo**, manifesto. *To betray, to make manifest.*

**Profigitor**, eo alio. *To go forth.*

# Nominum & Verborum interpretatio.

**Prælo**, multum five multo tempore lavo ; *All to wash.*  
**Præmines**, procul apparo ; *To hang out in sight.*

**Promo**, profero, eloquor ; *to set abroad, or to utter.*  
**Promptu**, parare sine mora ; *With readiness or speed.*

**Psallo**, cano instrumento musico ; *to sing, or to play on an instrument.*

**Puber**, vel pubes, proprie lanugo quæ maribus decimo quarto anno, foeminis duodecimo circa putenda oriri incipit ; *Ripeness of age.*

**Puder**, pudore afficio ; *It shames.*

**Putrasco**, exacta infantia porritam inchoo ; *to wax a child.*

**Pugil**, qui vel quæ pugnandi artem novit ; *A champion, man or woman.*

**Pulvis**, & pulver ; *Dust.*  
**Notum** est.

**Pumex**, lapis cavernosus ; *A pumice stone.*

**Punctum**, & punctum, minima individuaque lineæ pars ; *A prick, or a point, a little centre.*

**Pungo**, stimulo, morsum ac aculeum infigo ; *to prick, or sting.*

**Pus**, sanies, & quicunque humor in putredinem versus ; *Matter or core.*

**Python**, serpens e putredine natus ; *A serpent.*

**Quæro**, investigo, interrogo ; *to seek for, to search.*

**Quatio**, moveo, concurro ; *to shake.*

**Quercus** : *An Oak.*  
**Queror**, lamentor ; *to complain or lament.*

**Qui** : *The which.*

**Quies**, vacatio a labore, aut cessatio a quovis opere : *Rest, to appertain to the body.*  
**Tranquillitas**, unto the mind.  
**Quilibet**, Every one, or whoever you will.

**Quiesco**, caput inclino, moveo ; *to hang the head.*

**Quisquille**, purgamenta, & quicquid ex arboribus surculorum, foliorum, aut flo-

rum minutim decidit ; *things of no weight, things not worthy regard, or chippings.*  
**Quot**, How many.

**Rabula**, homo futilis : *A brawler, or a smatterer in the law.*

**Rado**, cultro vel quavis re acuta decerpo, *to shave.*

**Ramex**, ruptura & dissentio intestinorum : *Burlesqueness.*

**Rapio**, per vim traho, aufero ; *to snatch away.*

**Rastrum**, instrumentum dentatum, quo utimur in scenificio ad corradendum sœnum : *A rake.*

**Raucio**, raucus sum ; *to be hoarse.*

**Recido**, retro five iterum in eadem cado : *to fall backward, or to fall into the same again.*

**Recordor**, rursus in mentem revoco ; *to call to mind again.*

**Reddo**, acceptum vel ablatum restituo ; *to render, or to restore.*

**Redoleo**, odorem alicujus rei refero, vel multum oleo : *To bear the savour of a thing, or to savour strongly, and by a metaphor, to resemble and to taste of.*

**Refringo**, iterum frango, *to break open.*

**Rego**, guberno ; *to rule or to govern.*

**Relego**, rursus lego, *to read again.*

**Reminiscor**, recordor, meminî ; *to remember.*

**Ren**, viscus quoddam ; *the kidney.*

**Renno**, refuto, rejicio ; *to refuse.*

**Reor**, arbitror, puto ; *to suppose.*

**Repango**, dissolvo, rejungo ; *to unloose, to disjoin.*

**Reperio**, invenio ; *to find.*

**Repetundarum**, alienarum pecuniarum, de quibus præses provinciæ provincialibus accusatur, si quas vi aut dolo expilavit : *Of bribery and pillage, or of extortion.*

**Replendo**, dissolvo ; *to unfold.*

**Repungo**, iterum stimulo, vicem reddo ; *to prick again.*

**Res**, omnia five corporalia, five incorporalia comprehendit : *A thing.*

**Rescio**, rursus percipio ; *to know again.*

**Respuo**, repudio, sperno ; *to refuse.*

**Restu**, funis vel lorum : *A Rope or a With.*

**Resulto**, resilio, revertor, in contrarium salio ; *to rebound.*

**Rele**, instrumentum quo pisces capiuntur . *A net.*

**Rex**, nota est significatio : *A King.*

**Rideo**, cachinno, *to laugh.*

**Ringo**, os torqueo ut canes ; *to make an evil savour'd face like a snarling dog, and to vex.*

**Robur**, species quercus durissima : *An Oak.*

**Rodo**, mordeo, comedo ; *to gnaw.*

**Roma**, urbs Italiæ quondam a pastoribus condita, olim gentium domina, cum floret, quarta & postrema monarchia ; *Rome.*

**Ros**, humor qui sereno tempore cælo fluit . *A dew.*

**Restra**, templum seu forum judiciale ante curiam Hostilium, in quo erat pulpitum, ex quo concionari solebant ; *the place where matters are declaimed.*

**Rudens**, funis nauticus ; *A Cable.*

**Rado**, graviter sono ut asinus : *to cry like an Ass.*

**Rumpo**, frango, *to break.*

**Ruo**, cado, *to fall.*

**Rur**, locus extra urbem, ubi agri sunt & villæ : *the Country.*

**Sacer**, quod venerabile & Holy.

**Sacerdos**, deo dicatus, ad sacrificia facienda : *A Priest or a Nun.*

**Sacro**, deo dedico, sacrum facio ; *to dedicate.*

**Sal**, quo utimur in cibis condiendis : *Salt.*

**Salio**, salto, *to leap, or to leap*



# Nominum & Verborum interpretatio.

*leap as brute beasts do, when the male covereth the female.*

*Salto, sale condio ac conspergo: to salt, to powder, or to season with salt.*

*Salto: to leap or to dance.*

*Salum, mare, a sapore salis: the sea.*

*Salus, incolumitas: Health.*

*Sammī, nomen gentis: A Samnite.*

*Sancio, firmo, & proprie effuso sanguine per hostiæ immolati nem: to make sure and to establish.*

*Sanguis, cruor qui ex vulnere spargitur: Blood.*

*Sapphirus, pretiosus lapis: A Sapphire.*

*Sapientia, rerum divinarum atque humanarum scientia: Wisdom.*

*Sapio, saporem habeo: to have a taste.*

*Sarcio, purgo, reficio, integrum facio: to patch and amend.*

*Sardonyx: A certain precious stone.*

*Satago, fatis ago, laboro, sollicitus sum: to do, to endeavour.*

*Satrapas, princeps: a Prince.*

*Scabo, frico: to scratch, or to rub.*

*Scalpo, sculpo, & fodio unguibus ac manibus: to claw or to scratch.*

*Scando, in altum tendo: to climb.*

*Scindo, seco, findo: to cut or to divide.*

*Scio: To know.*

*Scobis, & scobs, est id quod ab aliqua materia decidit per ferrum, terebram, aut limam: Dust.*

*Scriba, qui literas, vel gesta, vel tabellas, & similia scribit alterius nomine: A Scribe or Notary.*

*Scripto, literas formo: to write.*

*Serobis, fossa aut puteus: A ditch or pit.*

*Scurra, qui risum ab auditoribus capat, non habita ratione verecundiæ, aut dignitatis: A scoffer, a jester, or a parasite.*

*Secarno, abjungo, separo: to divide or separate.*

*Seco, divido: to cut.*

*Sedeo, quiesco: to sit.*

*Seges, frumentum in spicis: Corn yet standing.*

*Seligo, seorsum colligo: to gather a part.*

*Semē, id est, semias, sex uncia, dimidium asis: Half a pound, or the half of any whole sum.*

*Senectā vel senectus, senium, atas: Old age.*

*Senex, senio confectus: An old man.*

*Senio, quod sex puncta continet: the five point.*

*Senium, idem quod senectā.*

*Sensus, & sensum organum sentiendi, & quod mente concipitur: Any of the five wits, called the senses, or that which the mind conceiveth, called the meaning.*

*Sentio, aliquid sensu percipio, pro intelligo ponitur: to perceive by some sense, or to understand.*

*Sentis, spina: A thorn.*

*Sepelio, defunctum terra condo: to bury.*

*Sepio, obstruo, circundo, munio: to compass, to hedge.*

*Septs, serpens parvus: A little serpent, after whose stroke the members do rot.*

*Sequor, absumteim subsequor: to follow.*

*Sermo, loquela: speech.*

*Ser, populus Asiæ: One of a certain people in Asia called Seres.*

*Sero, semino, planto: to sow or plant, or to graft, and sometimes by translation, to beget, also we say, Serere bella, ferere certamina, id est, movere lites & pugnas.*

*Serpens, anguis: A dragon, serpent, or a snake.*

*Sibilus, est quidam stridor oris per angustam spiritus emissionem, inter dentes fere: An hissing.*

*Sido, descendo ad sedendum: to pitch, or to lay down.*

*Siler, arbor quam vulgo fallicem vocant: An Osier, with which difference, Montanum, is*

*signifieth a simple, that the Apothecaries do use in Latine called Seceli Mustilense.*

*Silex, lapis durissimus, unde ignis excutitur: A flint stone.*

*Sinapis, & sinapi, herba est semen ferens, tanta acrimonia ut lachrymas cieat comedenti: Senny, Mustard.*

*Sindon, velum subtilissimum. Fine linnen cloth, lawn.*

*Singultio, graviter tussio & singultum emitto: to sob.*

*Sino, permitto: to suffer.*

*Sinum, & sinum, genus vasu sinuosi: A bowl, or a dish to drink wine or milk in.*

*Siren, monstrum maris. A Maremaid.*

*Sifer, herba cujus radix præcipue est in usu: A parsnip.*

*Sisto, stare facio: to stand before.*

*Sistis, desiderium potionalis thirst.*

*Soboles, successio: An offspring.*

*Socrus, uxoris, vel mariti mater: A mother in law.*

*Sodalis, ejusdem sortis socius: a fellow.*

*Sol, qui Phœbus dicitur: the Sun.*

*Soleo, suctus sum: to be wont.*

*Solium, sella regia, in qua reges jus dicentes sedebant: A throne or chair of state.*

*Solvo, quod ligatum erat dissolvo, ac enodo: to loose.*

*Somnus, sopor, quies: sleep.*

*Sono, sonum facio: to sound.*

*Sorbeo, diglutio quicquam molle: to sup.*

*Soror, notum est: A sister.*

*Spargo, late projicio ac passim facto: to sparkle or sprinkle.*

*Species, effigies, aromata, genus. visio. A form, specie, the kind of a thing, or an appearance.*

*Specio, video: to see.*

*Specus, spelunca unde spectare licet. A den to wait a prey in.*

*Sperno, despicio, contemno: to despise.*

*Spinus, agrestium prunorum arbor. A spoc-tree.*

*Spica,*

# Nominum & Verborum interpretatio.

**Spem,** lien, viscus quoddam, the milt.

**Spondeo,** sponte promitto; to promise, and sometime to betroth.

**Sponsalia,** sponsio five stipulatio futurarum nuptiarum: Betrothing with conditions taken.

**Spontus,** naturæ & ingenii proprii: Of nature and own disposition.

**Statuo,** pono, colloco, erigo: to place, to set up; sometime to decree and appoint, sometime to dedicate, and set before.

**Sterno,** projicio in terram: to throw down, or to spread.

**Sterto,** dormio, somnum altum dormiendo capio: to sleep till we snort.

**Stipus,** & stipis, pecuniæ genus, quod per capita colligere solent: a money gathered by the poth, for the use of the gods, or for the poor: and therefore it signifieth a reward or profit.

**Stirps,** origo, progenies, soboles: a stock, a tribe, a descent, and sometime it is the body of a tree. Idem quod truncus.

**Sto,** erectus sum, vel mæneo: to stand.

**Strepo,** sonum facio: to make a noise.

**Strillo,** strepitum edo: to make a noise, a whiffing, or a croaking.

**Strideo,** facio stridorem, sonum violentum; to make a great noise, or to gnash with teeth. It is applied also to wheels, to doo's hooks, to serpents, to the sea, and such other things.

**Stringo,** premo, arcto: to make strait, to pull, sometime to strike.

**Struo,** to build, to pile up, and sometime to endeavour, and to go about, or to set in away.

**Stultitia,** imprudentia, stoliditas: Foolishness.

**Suadeo,** hortor ad id quod intendo: to counsel.

**Suber,** genus ligni, quod

nautis utile est, ut supernatent retia: a cork-tree.

**Sublego,** furto aliquid surripio: Privily to steal away.

**Suboleo,** leviter oleo, five odoratus sensu leviter percipio: to savour, or to smell a thing a little, and by translation to be espied, and so be smelled out.

**Susco,** solco; to be accusomed.

**Sustero,** sustineo, patior: to sustain or abide.

**Sugo,** spiritu attraho succum; to suck.

**Sulmo,** oppidum in Brutis: a town.

**Sum:** to be.

**Sumo,** multum & pene nimum mihi: to take.

**Supellex,** res domestica: Household-stuff.

**Suppetia,** auxilium, subsidium: aid, help, succour.

**Supplicio,** humiliter & cum reverentia precor: to intreat.

**Surgo,** erigo me: to arise, sometime to spring, or to grow, to increase. It is also to arise by little and little, as things do in building.

**Sus,** animal sordidum: a Boar, Sow, or Hog.

**Symodus,** conventus; a council congregate.

**Taceo,** fileo, non loquor, to keep silence.

**Tedet,** pertæsum est, displicet: It irketh or wearieth.

**Tanarus,** locus umbrosus in radice Maleæ promontorii Laconia juxta Spartam civitatem in quo quia hiatus magnus est, & strepitus quasi progredientium sentitur, dixerunt veteres per hunc esse descensum ad inferos: a promontory in Laconia, wherein is an entrance to go down to Hell.

**Tagus,** fluvius Lusitaniz habens arenas aureas: a certain river in Portugal.

**Talio,** vindicta, hostimentum; avengement, or like for like.

**Talpa,** animal caprum oculis muri simile: a Mole, or Wasp.

**Tango,** percutio: to touch.

**Tantundem,** æque tantum as much.

**Tapes,** vel tapetum, vel tapete, id est, panni depicti tegimen, mire pictum variis coloribus: a carpet, or a cloth of arras.

**Tartarus,** demissior inferni locus: Hell.

**Taygetus,** mons in Laconide Baccho facer, sub quo Sparta & Amyclæ, an hill in Lacedæmonia, where Sparta and Amyclæ the Cities do stand.

**Teges,** vile stragulum, matia scirpea; a mat.

**Temno,** sperno: to despise.

**Tempe,** pulcherrimus ager in Thessalia quem Peneus alluit: a very fair field in Thessalia, most pleasant to behold, and therefore appellationally it may be used for a place of delight, as Paradise and Elisum are: there is also Tempe in Boætia, called Temnesia Tempe: another in Sicily, named for difference Helorix: the first is called Thessalia Tempe.

**Tendo,** expando: to stretch or bend.

**Teneo,** apprehendo: to hold.

**Tepeo,** in medio inter calidum & frigidum sum: to be warm.

**Teperesco,** tepidus fio: to wax hot.

**Ternio,** numerus ternarius: the number of three.

**Tero,** comminuo, confumo, tundo: to wear by diminishing.

**Tesqua,** loca edita, aspera: Rough places.

**Testis,** qui vel quæ testimoniū profert: a witness, man or woman.

**Teucrus,** Teucer, nomen proprium Trojanorum regis: a name of a certain King of Troy.

**Texo,** telam struo ac paro: to weave.

**Thebe,** nomen quarundum urbium: the name of a City in Egypt, and of another in Boætia, you shall also find in authors Thebæ and Theba.

**Therma,** loca aquas habentia, aut naturæ sponte calen-

# Nominum & Verborum interpretatio.

**tes**, aut fornace calefactus fundendi lavandive usus servata: *Hot baths.*

**Thorax**, pectus & pectoris munimentum: *The breast, and breast-plate.*

**Thrax**, vir Thraciae; a Thracian.

**Thus**, incensum libamen quo Deum veneramus, aliquando ipsa arbor: *Frankincense, and the tree.*

**Tignus**, tignum, trabs quae variè disposita domus extruitur: *a rafter.*

**Tigris**, animal velocissimum & truculentum: *a Tigre.*

**Timeo**, metuo: *to fear.*

**Timeor**, metuor: *to be feared.*

**Titubo**, lingua vel pedibus vacillo: *to stumble or stagger.*

**Tollo**, elevo, sublevo: *to lift up, to bring up, as children are by nursing, or also to slay or take away.*

**Tondeo**, crines vel lanam secor forcipe: *to clip or shear.*

**Tonitrus**, & tonitru, nubis ictus seu potius disrupta sonus: *thunder.*

**Tono**, valde sono, ac facio tonitru: *to thunder.*

**Torpeo**, languidus sum & remissus: *to be sluggish and weak.*

**Torqueo**: *to wreath, wrest, to wind or turn about, to govern, to spin, to vex and trouble, to whirl, &c.*

**Torquus**, circulus aureus collique ornamentum: *A chain to adorn the neck.*

**Torrents**, fluvius per pluviæ collectus: *A Lake without spring, begun by rain.*

**Torreo**, uro, alio: *to roast.*

**Torræ**, lignum ardens vel adustum: *a fire-brand.*

**Tot**: *So many, or many.*

**Trahō**, traho, vel sursum traho: *to pull and draw up, or to handle by fair or foul means.*

**Trado**, in potestatem alterius transfero: *to deliver unto another.*

**Traho**, vi ad me rapio ac duco: *to draw.*

**Trahō**, legendo trans-

curro ac perlego: *to read over.*

**Tremo**, commoveor, agitor: *to tremble.*

**Tres**: *three.*

**Tribus**, progenies: *a kindred.*

**Trices**, capilli pedibus puliorum gallinaceorum involuti: *Hair or feathers wrapped about the feet of chickens, or pigeons; also ugin trifles.*

**Triptoton**, nomen quod tribus quibuscunque casibus inflectitur: *a noun declined with three cases.*

**Tros**, nomen viri: *a Trojan.*

**Trudo**, manibus pedibive impello: *to thrust.*

**Tu**: *thou.*

**Tuber**, dictum a tumendo, & priore longa, terræ callosus: *a swelling in any thing, a mushroom, or that whereof the push is.*

**Tueor**, defendo: *to defend.*

**Tuor**, video: *to see.*

**Tundo**, decutio, pulso: *to beat or to knock.*

**Tussis**, vehemens spiritus eruptio, ex qua meatuum suum obstruunt excutere conantes: *the cough.*

**Tybrin**, fluvius Italiae: *Tyber.*

**Tybur**, oppidum Italiae.

**V**

**Vado**, eo: *To go.*

**Valeo**, possum, validus ac sanus sum: *to be in good health, or to be able.*

**Valva**, sunt fores geminas habentes partes in se coeuntes: *a two leaved door.*

**Vannus**: *a van to winnow corn with.*

**Vas**, vadis, vadimonium: *a surety in a matter of debt.*

**Vas**, vasis, instrumentum ad aliquid capiendum idoneum: *a vessel.*

**Vates**, poeta, & qui futura prædicat: *a Prophet, or a Prophetess.*

**Vber**: *The adjective signifieth plentiful, abundant, copious: the substantive signifieth a pap, or a dug, or an udder, & sometime it is found for plenteousness: as, Uber agri: for Fertility of agri.*

**Vetis**, instrumentum quod clauditur ostium: *a door bar.*

**Veho**, navi, plaustris, quadrupede porto: *to carry.*

**Vello**, traho, extirpo: *to pull or to pluck up.*

**Vendo**, venundo, alieno: *to sell.*

**Veneo**, vendor: *to be sold.*

**Venio**, ad aliquem accedo: *to come.*

**Venter**, qui a pectore ad pubem terminatur: *a belly.*

**Venus**, dea amoris & venustatis: *the goddess of love and beauty.*

**Ver**, anni pars temperatio: *the spring time.*

**Verber**, instrumentum longum verberandi: *any thing that we beat withal, as a rod, whip, wand, or other. It signifieth also the stripe.*

**Verberis**, hoc non videtur deficere ullo casu. Vide **Verber**.

**Verge**, tendo, declino: *to bend, to go, to incline some way.*

**Vermis**, a vertendo, quia sese torquendo reptat: *a worm.*

**Verna**, ex ancilla domi natus servus: *a bond-man born of a bond-woman at home. It is used adjectively for that that is domestical, or not strange: as, Vinum verna.*

**Verris**, porcus non castratus: *an hog.*

**Verro**, purgo, traho: *to sweep.*

**Verto**, muto, volvo: *to turn, or to change.*

**Vervex**, mas inter oves, cui adempti sunt testiculi: *a Weather.*

**Vescor**, utor cibo, & pascor: *to eat.*

**Vesper**, idem quod Hesperus. It is called also **Vesperugo**, and it is taken for the evening tide.

**Veto**, prohibeo: *to forbid.*

**Vicem**, vicissitudinem: *an interchange when turns be.*

**Video**, oculis intueor: *to see.*

**Vieo**, ligo, seu inflecto: *to bend or to bow: thereof Vinctores be called Coopers, qui vasa vinaria religant.*

**Vigil**, qui vel quæ vigilat: *a watcher, man or woman.*

**Vincio**, ligo: *to bind.*

**Vincio**,

## Nominum & Verborum interpretatio.

*Vitaco, supero: to overcome.*  
*Vindex, qui vel quæ vindicat: an avenger, man or woman.*

*Vir, notum est: a man.*  
*Virgilius, Poeta: a Poet's name.*  
*Virgo, quæ non est passa virum: a virgin.*

*Virtus, ars bene recteque vivendi: virtue, or great power.*

*Virus, venenum, & gravis odor: Poison, or stench.*

*Vs, virtus, robur, fortitudo, natura, violentia: strength, power, nature, violence.*

*Viscus, vel viscus, id est, glutinum ad aucupium: Birdlime.*

*Viso, eo ad videndum, to go to see.*

*Vitrum, materia translucida, quæ ex arena & cinere fit: Glass.*

*Vivo, vitam ago, to live.*

*Vlcefor, vindico, to avenge.*

*Unguis, durities, digitorum, tam in avibus cæterisque bestis, quam in homine, a nail, a hoof, and a talon.*

*Vocito, frequenter voco. Osten to call.*

*Volo, as, to fly, or go apace: as, Navis volat. Fama volat.*

*Vol, Volo, vis, n to will, or be willing.*

*Volvo, verro, to rowle.*

*Vomâ, vel vomer, nomen habet, quod terram vomat, the plough-share.*

*Vomo, per os ejiçio, to vomit, or to par-break.*

*Urgeo, premo, compello, to thrust.*

*Uro, adore aut frigore, nunquam alia vi lædo, to burn, and by translation to hurt, or to grieve.*

*Uxor, usum rei habeo, to use.*

*Vulgus, multitudo ignobilis, the base and common people.*

*Vulpes, animal astutum, a Fox, or a Fixon.*

*Uxor, viri conjux, a wife.*

*Finiß interpretationis Nominum & Verborum Grammatices Regiæ.*

### *Magister discipulos ad studium literarum cohortans.*

**V**Os ad se, pueri, primis invitat ab annis,  
 Atque suâ Christus voce venire jubet;  
 Præmiâque ostendit vobis venientibus ampla;  
 Sic vos, ô pueri, curat amatque Deus.  
 Vos igitur læti properate, occurrite Christo,  
 Prima sit hæc Christum noscere cura Deum.  
 Sed tamen ut Dominum possis cognoscere Christum,  
 Ingenuas artes discito, parve puer.  
 Hoc illi gratum officium est, hoc gaudet honore;  
 Infantum fieri notior ore cupit.  
 Quare nobiscum studium ad commune venite,  
 Ad Christum monstrat nam schola nostra viam.

#### *Puer ante lectionem.*

**Æ**Terno soboles amata Patri,  
 Quem vox æthere missa mandat unum  
 Audiri que, colique, Christe, qui nos  
 Ad te voce jubes venire blandâ,  
 Affirmans pueros Deo placere;  
 Da sanctum mihi Spiritum, Magistro  
 Ut monstrante, viam ingredi, Redemptor  
 Ad te qua liceat venire, possim;  
 Da cum moribus artibusque honestis  
 Sacri dũgmata puriora verbi  
 Addiscam; sapientiaque & annis  
 Ut crescens, tibi plurimos, & ipsi

*Olim*

Olim adducere, quæ facit beatos,  
Doctrinamque alios docere possim.  
Hæc est summa mei, caputque voti;  
Quod ratum jubeas ut esse, per te  
Ipsum Christe rogo, tuumque nomen,  
Æterno soboles amata Patri.

*Puer orans ante Cibum.*

Conditor & rector magni Pater optime mundi,  
Huc ades, & donis auxiliare tuis;  
Nate Deo, nostræ reparator Christe salutis,  
Ut cibus, ut positus fac benè potas alat.  
Et tu sancte comes, dux solatorumque piorum  
Spiritus, huic mensæ mitis adesse velis.  
Corpora sic rectè pascentur nostra, nihilque  
Languida sic poterit lædere membra mali.

*Post Cibum.*

Corpora qui solito satiasti nostra cibatu,  
Qui satias toto quicquid in orbe manet;  
Pasce tuo, Genitor, mortalia pectora verbo,  
Nostræque cœlesti nectare corda riga:  
Quo pariter membris, pariter quoque mente refecti  
Usque tuâ liceat nos bonitate frui;  
 tandem etiam placido vectos super æthera cursu,  
Inter felices alstra tenere choros.

*Oratio Matutina.*

Christe, Dei æterni soboles æterna parentis,  
Ex illibata virgine natus homo,  
Morte tuâ qui devicta de morte triumphas,  
Et peccata tuo sanguine nostra lavas;  
Ah vitam largire piis sine fine beatam,  
Qui te cunque fide non dubitante colunt.  
O da peccati tangat mea pectora sensus,  
Delicti ut pigeat, pœniteatque mei.  
Utque petens veniam credam tibi vera professio,  
Et studium de te pendeat omne meum:  
Te solum venerer, tibi discam fidere soli,  
Unicum & agnoscam te Dominum atque Deum.  
Neve tuo à cultu vesana mente recedam,  
Resque prior mihi sit nomine nulla tuo.  
Nec me quicquam in vita aut in necesse separet abste,  
Sed semper famulus sim, maneamque tuus.

A M E N.





